

Orthology Photography Fiction Fishing  
Christianity Art Cooking Essays  
Buddhism Freemasonry Medicine Biology  
Music Ancient Egypt Evolution  
Carpentry Physics Dance Geology  
Vermorens Fitness Shakespeare  
Chiropractic Yoga Marketing Confidence  
Immortality Biographies Poetry  
Psychology Witchcraft Electronics  
Chemistry History Law Accounting  
Philosophy Anthropology Alchemy Drama  
Quantum Mechanics Atheism Sexuality  
Mental Health Ancient History Criminal  
Engineering Poetry Language Sport  
Physiology Neuroscience Mathematics  
Metaphysics Investment Archaeology

# Forgotten Books

— [www.forgottenbooks.com](http://www.forgottenbooks.com) —

Copyright © 2016 FB &c Ltd.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, distributed, or transmitted in any form or by any means, including photocopying, recording, or other electronic or mechanical methods, without the prior written permission of the publisher, except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical reviews and certain other noncommercial uses permitted by copyright law.

# BAPTIST SUCCESSION:

A

## HAND-BOOK OF BAPTIST HISTORY.

By D. B.  RAY,

*of Lexington, Kentucky,*

AUTHOR OF "TEXT-BOOK ON CAMPBELLISM."

---

"Upon this rock I will build my Church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it."—*Matt.* 16: 18.

"But we desire to hear of thee what thou thinkest; for as concerning this sect, we know that every-where it is spoken against."—*Acts* 23: 22.

---

CINCINNATI:

PUBLISHED FOR THE AUTHOR.

Entered, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1870,  
By D. B. RAY,  
In the Office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington.

---

STEREOTYPED BY MCKAY & CULLIN.

# PREFACE.

---

THE Angel said to Daniel that, in the *last days*, “Many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased.” This prophecy is especially being fulfilled as regards church history; for a number of the ripest scholars of Europe and America are devoting their energies to this great work, with the prospect of much good as the result. It has ever been the policy of Rome to destroy, as far as possible, not only the true church itself, but every vestige of its history. This fell design has led Romish authors to make the effort to blacken the character of the Church of Christ, by accusing its members of almost every crime which Satanic malice could invent. And they have so far succeeded in their purpose, as to make the impression on the multitude, that there is no *church succession* independent of Rome, and that all other churches came out of the Catholic Church! Baptists have with one voice denied any connection with the Romish apostacy, and claimed their origin as a church from Jesus Christ and the apostles. If this claim of the Baptists is true, they should ever be willing and able to furnish the evidence upon which they rest their claims to antiquity. But, owing to the *scarcity* and *cost* of old ecclesiastical histories and documents, the people are deprived of the means of knowing the facts of history which ought to be in the reach of every one. It is the design of this work to furnish, in a convenient shape, the leading facts of history which every Christian should know. I can see no reason why any child of God should be indifferent as to the history of the “martyrs of Jesus,” upon whose blood the Romish harlot was drunk for so many ages. I know that the full details of the cruel sufferings of these *witnesses* for Christ is preserved alone in the archives of heaven, and will there be preserved till that glorious day when every hidden thing shall be brought to light.

Eager historians have ever been ready to rear monuments of fame to the memory of *heroes* and *tyrants* who have drenched the earth



in human blood, and have arisen to greatness through treachery and crime; and the admiring multitudes are ready to shout the praises of these human butchers, that have shrouded nations in mourning and distress. But, how few are interested in the history of those men and women of whom the world is not worthy, who forsook all for the kingdom of God, and became pilgrims and strangers on the earth. They were often clad in sheep-skins and goat-skins, and wandered in deserts and mountains; they sometimes lived in caves and dens of the earth, or dragged out their wretched lives in filthy prison-dungeons; and, at last, thousands of them sealed their testimony at the stake, where they sang and shouted the praises of God, amidst the flames which devoured their bodies. Is it possible that God's children, who are more highly favored, feel no interest in the investigation of the history of the Bride of Jesus Christ, whose wanderings in the wilderness may be traced by her martyr blood, as seen in the gloomy light of the martyr fires? We have a number of valuable histories of the Baptists—such as those written by Crosby, Ivimey, Orchard, Benedict, Cramp, and others; but still there is a demand for the *Hand-Book of Baptist History*, arranged for convenient reference. This work will be found especially valuable to those who do not have access to historic libraries. Instead of being compelled to search for years through rare and musty volumes, the reader is here furnished with the facts, suitably arranged, to meet all ordinary demands. This collection has been prepared at great cost and labor, amidst the pressure of other cares and duties. The reader is left to judge for himself as to the merits of the present volume. It is my earnest desire to point sinners to Jesus Christ, as the only name given in heaven, or among men, whereby they can be saved. And I also wish to aid the people of God, by pointing them to the Church of Jesus Christ, which is the “pillar and ground of the truth.”

Praying that the blessings of God may rest upon this effort to promote His glory, I dedicate this work to the Churches of Jesus Christ.

D. B. R.

# CONTENTS.

---

## CHAPTER I.

	PAGE.
1. The Visibility of the Church or Kingdom.....	9
2. The Nature of the Succession.....	15
3. Baptist Peculiarities.....	19

## CHAPTER II.

### THE "MISSIONARY" AND "OLD-SCHOOL" BAPTISTS.

1. The Regular Baptists and the Anti-Mission Baptists were once associated together as One People.....	22
2. In the Separation, the "Hard-Shell," or Anti-Mission Baptists, were the Seceding Party, which <i>withdrew</i> from the Regular Baptists .....	24
3. "From the days of the Apostles to the present time, the true, legitimate Baptist Church has ever been a Missionary body"....	26
4. The Churches founded by Christ and the Apostles were Missionary Churches .....	33
5. The Ancient Regular Baptists in favor of Ministerial Education...	37

## CHAPTER III.

### AMERICAN BAPTISTS.

1. Roger Williams was never a Member of a true, legitimate Baptist Church.....	42
2. The Newport, and not the present Providence First Church, the oldest Baptist Church in America.. ..	51
3. No present Baptist Church or Minister has Baptism by Succession from Roger Williams .....	58
4. Baptist Ministers from Europe who aided in planting the Early American churches .....	62

CHAPTER IV.

ENGLISH BAPTISTS.

	PAGE.
1. The English Baptists did not Originate with John Smith .....	76
2. The English Baptists are descended from the German Baptists.....	84

CHAPTER V.

GERMAN BAPTISTS.

1. The German Baptists did not Originate with the Munster Riot.....	91
2. The German Baptists descended from the Ancient Waldenses,.....	99

CHAPTER VI.

THE ANCIENT WALDENSES.

1. The Name Waldenses .....	107
2. The Charge of Drs. Miller and Rice against Jones, the Historian,	114
3. Ancient Waldenses Baptists—Modern Waldenses Pedobaptists.....	121
4. The Origin of the Waldenses .....	138

CHAPTER VII.

THE NOVATIANS.

1. The Churches called “Novatian Churches” did not Originate with Novatian.....	154
2. The Origin of the Novatians.....	159

CHAPTER VIII.

BAPTIST PECULIARITY FIRST—JESUS THE FOUNDER  
AND HEAD.

1. Peculiarity First tested by the Bible.....	171
2. Peculiarity First identified in Present Baptist Teaching.....	178

CHAPTER IX.

BAPTIST PECULIARITY SECOND—THE BIBLE AS THE  
RULE OF CONDUCT.

1. Peculiarity Second tested by the Bible .....	180
2. Peculiarity Second identified in Present Baptist Teaching .....	184



## CHAPTER X.

### BAPTIST PECULIARITY THIRD—ORDER OF THE COMMANDMENTS.

	PAGE.
1. Peculiarity Third tested by the Bible .....	190
2. Peculiarity Third identified in Present Baptist Teaching.....	195

## CHAPTER XI.

### BAPTIST PECULIARITY FOURTH—BURIAL IN BAPTISM OF THE DEAD TO SIN.

1. Baptist Peculiarity Fourth tested by the Bible.....	199
2. Peculiarity Fourth identified in Present Baptist Teaching.....	206

## CHAPTER XII.

### BAPTIST PECULIARITY FIFTH—EQUALITY IN THE KINGDOM.

1. Baptist Peculiarity Fifth tested by the Bible .....	209
2. Peculiarity Fifth identified in Present Baptist Teaching.....	223

## CHAPTER XIII.

### PECULIARITY SIXTH—RESTRICTED COMMUNION.

1. Objections to Restricted Communion answered .....	233
2. Baptist Peculiarity Sixth—Restricted Communion tested by the Bible .....	239
3. Concessions to Baptist Views of Communion .....	250
4. Peculiarity Sixth—Communion in the Kingdom identified with Present Baptist Teaching.....	262

## CHAPTER XIV.

### PECULIARITY SEVENTH—THE TRUE CHURCH PERSECUTED.

1. Peculiarity Seventh—the True Church Persecuted—tested by the Bible .....	266
2. Peculiarity Seventh identified in Modern Baptist History.....	271

CHAPTER XV.

PRIMITIVE CHURCHES—FROM THE ESTABLISHMENT OF THE CHURCH TO THE NOVATIAN RUPTURE—A PERIOD OF ABOUT TWO HUNDRED AND TWENTY YEARS.

	PAGE.
1. Peculiarities applied to the Primitive Churches.....	285
2. Bishop and Elder the same Office .....	302
3. Errors which Originated in this Period .....	304

CHAPTER XVI.

THE NOVATIAN PERIOD—ABOUT TWO HUNDRED YEARS.

1. Peculiarities applied to the Novatians.....	313
2. The Great Apostacy .....	329

CHAPTER XVII.

THE WALDENSEAN PERIOD—TWELVE HUNDRED AND SIXTY YEARS.

1. Prophetic History of the Church during this Period.....	336
2. The Peculiarities applied to the Waldenses.....	347
3. False Churches which arose during this Period.....	393

CHAPTER XVIII.

MODERN BAPTIST PERIOD.

1. Peculiarities applied to Modern Baptists.....	409
2. Ancient and Modern Mennonites .....	431

CHAPTER XIX.

CONCLUSION .....	443
APPENDIX .....	451
ABBREVIATIONS.....	459



# BAPTIST SUCCESSION.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### THE KINGDOM.

1. THE VISIBILITY OF THE CHURCH OR KINGDOM.
2. THE NATURE OF THE SUCCESSION.
3. BAPTIST PECULIARITIES.

#### SECTION I.—THE VISIBILITY OF THE CHURCH OR KINGDOM.

*The Visibility of the Kingdom.*—“The law and the prophets were until John: since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it.” *Luke 16: 16.*

This text of itself is sufficient to establish the visibility of the kingdom of God. It is admitted by all parties that Jesus Christ has a kingdom on earth. I believe there are three theories concerning the government of Christ on earth: The *first* is, that God has two kingdoms on earth; the one a visible organization, and the other the invisible reign of grace in the hearts of men. The tendency of this view is to the neglect of, and contempt for, the positive ordinances and requirements of Jesus Christ. The individual is made to believe that he has been baptized with the Holy Spirit, and is a member of the “invisible” church; and he therefore regards the positive laws of the King in Zion as only types and shadows, of little or no consequence.

A *second* theory is, that there is no visible kingdom of Christ on earth; that the real kingdom of God is in the hearts of his subjects, and those who embrace this position feel themselves at liberty to institute, change, or abolish laws and customs. They persuade themselves that God has made no laws to govern his kingdom; and hence they come to the rescue, and enact laws for the control of the people of God. This view has been the mother of the vast variety of church organizations in the land.

But the *third* theory is, that Jesus Christ established a visible church, or kingdom, during his ministry on earth; and that the invisible kingdom is composed of that part of the church of the first born, that have entered heaven.

This last position we adopt. We do not believe that Jesus Christ organized an "invisible" church, or kingdom, on earth. We freely admit, however, that there are some of God's visible children in BABYLON, who are commanded to come out of her. For John said: "And

*Rev.* 18: 4. I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sin, and that ye receive not of her plagues."

Were these people of God in BABYLON and in the kingdom of Christ at the same time?

The following Scriptures are often urged in opposition to the visibility of the kingdom:

1. "And when he was demanded of the Pharisees when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, Lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you."

*Luke* 17: 20, 21.



The translation of this passage is evidently defective. For the words, "*the kingdom of God is within you*," were addressed, not to the disciples of Christ, but to the wicked Pharisees. It is certain that the kingdom of God was not in their murderous hearts. Some translate the Greek preposition *entos*, in this passage, *among*; and this would make the Saviour say, "the kingdom of God is *among you*," or, in your midst. That is, the members of the kingdom were then in the presence of, and among, the Jews.

It came not with observation; that is, it was not established with carnal weapons, amidst the confusion of battles and victories over conquered armies.

2. "*For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost.*" Rom. 14: 17.

How this passage can be tortured to prove the invisibility of the kingdom on earth, I am unable to see. The apostle, no doubt, was talking in this chapter of the meats offered in sacrifice to idols; and he thought it best not to eat such meat, lest the weak brother be made to offend. Does any one who holds the visibility of the kingdom, teach that the kingdom consists in *meat and drink*? Verily not. But what does the apostle mean when he says the kingdom of God is *righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost*? Does he teach the invisibility of the kingdom? No: For the very first element of the kingdom, named by the apostle, is **RIGHTEOUSNESS**, which certainly includes visible obedience to the ordinances of the kingdom. The baptism of Jesus was a part of the righteousness of the kingdom; for he said, *Matt. 3: 15.* "*thus it becometh us to fulfill all righteousness.*"

3. “*For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body,*  
 1 Cor. 12: 13. *whether we be Jews or Greeks, whether we  
 be bond or free; and have been all made to  
 drink into one Spirit.*”

This passage is relied on by some to support the notion that persons are now baptized by the Holy Spirit into the invisible church! They talk very confidently of their baptism by the Holy Spirit, and membership in the Church of Christ, independent of all church organizations.

Such persons have certainly forgotten that the real baptism of the Holy Spirit always endowed the possessor with the gift of tongues or inspiration. And they have overlooked the fact, that regeneration is one thing, and baptism of the Holy Spirit quite another. But to the passage: “For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body,” etc.

A better rendering of this passage would be, “*In one spirit are we all baptized into one body.*” *In* is the primary meaning of the Greek preposition *en*—rendered, in our version, *by*. The meaning of the passage is, in one Spirit, the Spirit of Christ, we have all been baptized into one body—*i. e.*, the visible kingdom or Church of Christ.

It is certain that Holy Spirit baptism is not referred to in this passage. If so, we would have the Holy Spirit both the administrator and element. It should be remembered, that the Scriptures nowhere represent the Holy Spirit as the administrator of baptism of any kind. Jesus Christ was the only administrator of the baptism of the Holy Spirit.

We now proceed to introduce the Scriptures which teach the visibility of the kingdom or Church of Jesus Christ. It is freely admitted that the term church is usually



applied in the New Testament to local bodies; as, the Church at Jerusalem, the Church at Antioch, the Church at Rome, etc.

But I am satisfied that the term church, or *ecclesia*, is also used by inspiration in the sense of kingdom. And such an example we have in Matt. xvi: 18; where the Savior said: "Upon this rock I will build my church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it." *Matt. 16: 18.*

I take this declaration of the Messiah as my *first* proof of the visibility of the church or kingdom. For if the Savior alluded to the reign of grace in the heart when he said, "I will build my church," this would contradict facts; for the reign of grace had already been *built* in the hearts of men from the time of Abel. Therefore, as that something which men are pleased to call the invisible kingdom, had been set up about four thousand years in the past, it is certain that Jesus Christ did not allude to the reign of grace in the heart when he said, "I *will build* my church." And as the Scriptures teach that none but men and women, believers, are eligible to church membership, therefore it would be as appropriate to speak of *invisible* men and women on earth as to speak of an invisible church on earth composed of men and women!

2, "*And from the days of John the Baptist until now, the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.*" *Matt. 11: 12.*

Will it be said that violent men take the *invisible* kingdom by force?

This is too absurd. But how could an invisible kingdom suffer violence? The kingdom of Christ, as a visi-



ble body, has suffered violence from the days of John the Baptist even until now.

3. “*Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins which took their lamps and went forth to meet the bridegroom. And five of them were wise and five were foolish,*” etc.  
*Matt. 25: 1-13.*

It is generally conceded that the foolish virgins represent false professors in the kingdom. But if it refers to the invisible kingdom of grace in the heart, then the doctrine of final apostacy is true. But the very fact that false professors, foolish virgins, are in the kingdom, shows that the kingdom must be a visible organization.

4. The Savior said, at the institution of the supper, “I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me; That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom,” etc.  
*Luke 22: 29, 30.*

Here the Savior has fixed the Lord's table in the kingdom. Did he place the visible Communion in an invisible kingdom? The very fact that he instituted the supper, a visible ordinance, in the kingdom, is positive proof that that kingdom is visible. Jesus Christ has but one kingdom on earth, and that is a visible organization, especially to those who have been born again. It has visible subjects: those who have exercised repentance and faith, and have been buried with Christ in baptism, and are walking in the ordinances of the Lord's house. It has visible laws, which are contained in the Word of God. And it has visible ordinances: baptism and the Lord's Supper.

Therefore, we conclude that the kingdom of Jesus Christ is a visible organization. Once more, it is certain that Jesus Christ set up a visible kingdom, from the fol-

lowing prediction of Daniel: "And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed, and the kingdom shall not be left to other people; but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever." *Dan. 2: 44.* The reign of grace had been up in the hearts of men long before this prophecy was uttered; but the kingdom to be *set up* was still future; therefore, this prediction could not refer to the reign of grace in the hearts of men. It is admitted that the term *church* is applied in the Scriptures to denote all the saints in heaven and on earth; and that many of the children of God on earth do not belong to his true church; and it may be that the term *kingdom* is used in the same way. But, I contend that when the term *kingdom* is used, in the New Testament, with reference to this earth alone, it always refers to what is known as the *visible* kingdom.

---

## SECTION II.—THE NATURE OF THE SUCCESSION.

All well-informed Baptists are agreed in the belief that we, as a people, have continued from the time of Christ until the present. In other words, they hold and teach the perpetuity of the Church of Christ. They believe that the Baptist succession exists; that there has been no period of time since the death of Christ when Baptists have not existed. But Baptists do not claim "*apostolic succession*," because they admit that the apostolic office expired with the death of John the beloved. There was no more necessity for the apostolic office when Christianity was fully established and the canon of revelation completed. Neither do we claim *Popish* succes-



sion, for this is only the succession of Antichrist. But while some agree that the Baptist succession does exist, or that a succession of Baptists has continued from the time of Christ to the present, yet they, at the same time, deny *that the succession can be proved*. This is wholly inconsistent; for no one has the right to believe that which can not be proved. There can be no intelligent faith without evidence. If we have no evidence to prove a succession, it is out of the question to affirm that we believe in the existence of such succession. It appears that the taunts of our opponents have caused some of us almost to surrender our birthright. They tell us that this claim to succession is a "Popish principle," a "mark of the Beast," etc. But shall we reject a Bible doctrine because it has been perverted by the Church of Rome? Shall we reject the divinity of Christ because this is held by the Church of Rome? Shall we reject the ordinances of baptism and the Lord's Supper because these have been perverted by the Church of Rome? Or shall we give up our church organization because the Church of Rome, professing to be the Church of Christ, has become the most cruel ecclesiastical despotism which has ever disgraced the name of Christianity? Shall we reject all currency because of the counterfeit? And shall we surrender the perpetuity or succession of the "everlasting kingdom" of Jesus Christ because the Catholics have inaugurated the Popish succession of Antichrist?

But again, we are told that there is no importance whatever attached to the doctrine of succession; that it makes no difference whether we are in the succession or not, if we hold the Bible doctrine at the present time! But no man can hold the Bible doctrine of church organ-





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



can trace a succession of those who have believed the same doctrine and administered the same ordinances directly up to the apostolic age."

Mr. Benedict says: "The more I study the subject, the stronger are my convictions, that if all the facts in the case could be disclosed, a very good succession could be made out."

*Ben. Hist. Bapt.,*  
p. 51.

Dr. Howell says: "*I assert that from the days of the apostles to the present time the true, legitimate Baptist Church has ever been a missionary body.*"

*Letters to Dr.*  
*Watson, p. 3.*

John L. Waller says: "Here we rest our cause; the case is made out. The doctrine of re-forming the Papal Church is unwarranted by Scripture and unsupported by history."

*Baptists not Pro-*  
*testants, pp. 40-41.*

The Church of Christ was persecuted, but never overthrown; cast down, but not destroyed. It was built upon a rock, against which neither the powers of darkness nor the seductions of Satan, transformed into an angel of light, could prevail. Poor, persecuted, obscure, and despised, still the true friends of the Redeemer maintained the great truths of our holy religion, untterrified by opposition and unseduced by corruption. And the honor of being the witnesses for the truth and the word of God, when the civilized nations of the earth had bowed in blind and servile obedience to the authority of the Roman Pontiff, in sustaining in undiminished radiance and splendor the altar-fires of our holy religion during the long and dreary darkness of the world's midnight, belongs to the *Baptists*. This is confessed by their enemies; and thus in them is fulfilled the predictions of the prophets, and illus-



trated that promise of the Savior, 'that the gates of hell should not prevail against his church.'"

The succession was also maintained by the Baptist martyrs of past ages. One important object in pointing out our denominational history is to stimulate the zeal of modern Baptists by the heroic examples of our ancient brethren and sisters, who sealed their testimony with their blood, by showing that they suffered the loss of all things earthly for the same principles which distinguish us as a denomination. In other words, our principles have been handed down to us at the cost of the lives of millions of our brethren and sisters who loved the Church of Christ more than life itself. Like Abel, being dead, they yet speak to us of the glorious things concerning the kingdom of Christ, and still continue to bear witness against every form of Antichrist.

---

### SECTION III.—BAPTIST PECULIARITIES.

Before following up our line of succession it becomes necessary to lay down some characteristic features which have distinguished Baptists from all others through the past ages.

It is said by Solomon that Wisdom hath built her house; she hath hewn out her seven pillars; and I will here present seven pillars or peculiarities which distinguish Baptists from all others.

1. *The Baptists, as a church or kingdom, recognize Jesus Christ alone as their founder and head.*
2. *The Baptists regard the Bible alone as their rule of faith and practice.*
3. *The Baptists perpetuate the Bible order of the com-*

*mandments ; they teach repentance, faith, baptism, and the Lord's Supper.*

4. *Baptists immerse, or bury with Christ in baptism, only those who profess to be dead to, or freed from, sin.*

5. *Baptists recognize equal rights or privileges in the execution of the laws of the kingdom of Jesus Christ.*

6. *Baptists observe the Lord's Supper at his table in his kingdom.*

7. *Baptists have never persecuted others ; but have themselves always been peculiarly persecuted and every-where spoken against.*

There is no denomination in all christendom, except the Baptists, which holds any one of these *seven peculiarities*. They are, therefore, *Baptist peculiarities*. All Christians who hold and practice these principles may be regarded as belonging to the Baptist family, whether they are called Missionary, Old School, or Seventh-day Baptists. We are not contending for the succession of the name "Baptist," but for the perpetuity of the Church of Christ, which is now called "The Baptist Church." Baptists have never been sticklers about their name. They have been called by a multitude of names by their enemies. Even the name *Baptist* was not assumed by them. On this point Joseph Belcher remarks : "The name of

*Rel. Denom.*, p. 42. Baptist originated, not with the party so-called, but with their opponents.

Formerly they were called Anabaptists, or *Re-baptizers*, which they rejected as involving what they deemed a misrepresentation ; because, in their view, none are baptized but the parties mentioned in the Scriptural law relating to the subject, and to whom it is administered in the only prescribed mode." But as the name Baptist is not a mis-



---

representation, we raise no objection to it. The first administrator of baptism was called *the Baptist* by inspiration; and as Baptist churches administer the same ordinance through their ministers, therefore it is not unscriptural to call them Baptist churches.

The Baptist denomination of America numbers over a million members, and is the most influential and aggressive church on the continent. Our enemies are as much divided in their testimony in regard to our origin as were the witnesses who testified against Jesus. Some say that we sprang from the "Hard-Shell" or Anti-Mission Baptists; others, that we originated with Roger Williams, or the Munster riot; while *all* are agreed in saying, "Away with them."

## CHAPTER II.

### THE "MISSIONARY" AND "OLD SCHOOL" BAPTISTS.

1. THE REGULAR BAPTISTS, WHO ARE ALSO CALLED "MISSIONARY" OR "UNITED" BAPTISTS, AND THE ANTI-MISSION BAPTISTS, WERE ASSOCIATED TOGETHER AS ONE PEOPLE.
2. IN THE SEPARATION, THE HARD-SHELL, OR ANTI-MISSION BAPTISTS, WERE THE SECEDING PARTY, WHICH WITHDREW FROM THE REGULAR BAPTISTS.
3. "FROM THE DAYS OF THE APOSTLES TO THE PRESENT TIME, THE TRUE, LEGITIMATE BAPTIST CHURCH HAS EVER BEEN A MISSIONARY BODY."
4. THE CHURCHES FOUNDED BY CHRIST AND THE APOSTLES WERE MISSIONARY CHURCHES.
5. THE ANCIENT REGULAR BAPTISTS WERE IN FAVOR OF MINISTERIAL EDUCATION.

### SECTION 1.—THE REGULAR BAPTISTS AND THE ANTI-MISSION BAPTISTS WERE ONCE ASSOCIATED TOGETHER AS ONE PEOPLE.

It is a fact worthy of note, that no well informed historian has ever attempted to locate the time, place, and manner of the origin of the Baptist denomination this side of Christ and the apostles. But all historians can tell the year, the country, and the manner of the rise of all other denominations.

They can name the several founders of these sects, but they can not tell the origin of the Baptists. They are by them as the Pharisees were by John's baptism, "they can not tell." But of late some of less information, or candor, contend that the "Missicnary Baptists" broke off from

the "Old School," or "Hard-Shell" Baptists, about thirty or forty years ago. And the Anti-Mission brethren even call the missionaries the "New School Baptists." And some even tell us that they can remember very well when the "Missionaries" started! Now, all that is necessary in order to settle this question of the priority of the *Missionary* or *Anti-Missionary* parties among Baptists, is to appeal to historic facts and documents.

It may surprise some when they are informed, that no party among Baptists were ever called "Old School" until after the separation, about the year 1832, when the Anti-Mission brethren assumed the name—"Old School Baptists."

The *Regular Baptists* and the *Anti-Mission Baptists* were once together as one people; and, therefore, their history up to the separation was the same. The opposition of our Anti-Mission brethren to the mission work, and kindred objects, is a new feature among Baptists. There are some of the so-called "Old Baptists," who have lapsed into Two-seedism and Non-resurrectionism; and have thereby denied the faith; but there are others of them who still possess, in their church organization, the peculiar features of true Baptists.

It is, therefore, evident that such of the Hard-Shell churches as have not denied the peculiarities of the denomination, are still to be regarded as a part of the great Baptist family. Though it is equally evident that the most of them have impaired their usefulness by speculating on the *decrees* and *purposes* of God to the neglect of faithful preaching to sinners. There is now a growing disposition on the part of many of these good brethren, to recede from some extremes in their manner of preaching,



and co-operate with us again in the spread of the Gospel. And we fondly hope that the day is not distant, when all prejudice of each party will be buried, and all true Baptists will stand together in the army of our Master, as in times past. But in following up the Baptist succession, justice requires the correction of those false impressions which locate the origin of the "Missionary" Baptists with those who call themselves "Old Baptists."

---

SECTION II.—IN THE SEPARATION, THE "HARD SHELL"  
OR ANTI-MISSION BAPTISTS WERE THE SECEDING  
PARTY, WHICH WITHDREW FROM THE REGULAR  
BAPTISTS.

This secession, upon the part of our Anti-Mission brethren, occurred at different times in different parts of the country. In Virginia, the separation took place in the year, 1832. Elder S. Trott, an "Old School Baptist" of distinction, says of the separation: "This brought brethren, churches and associations that had been groaning under the burdens of human inventions and impositions in religion, to separate themselves, some sooner and some later, from the whole mass of the popular religion and religionists, and to take a stand as a distinct people, upon the *Old Baptist standard*. The holding of the Scriptures as the *only and a perfect rule of faith and practice*, and Christ as the Foundation, the Head, and the Life of the Church, the only source and medium of Salvation. This separation occasioned the splitting of several associations, and many churches. We took, as a distinguishing appellation, the name, 'Old School Baptists.'" Here is the candid

*Rel. Denom. in U.  
S. and G. B., p. 87.*





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



tion, that the "Old School" Baptists seceded or withdrew from the "Missionary" Baptists. Other authorities might be adduced in confirmation of the same. It has already been fully shown, that in the separation the Anti-Mission Baptists were the seceding party.

---

SECTION III.—"FROM THE DAYS OF THE APOSTLES TO  
*Letters of Dr. Howell* THE PRESENT TIME, THE TRUE,  
*to Dr. Watson, p. 3.* LEGITIMATE BAPTIST CHURCH  
HAS EVER BEEN A MISSIONARY  
BODY."

This declaration of Dr. Howell is fully sustained by historic facts. The opposition among Baptists to the mission work, is of recent date. But our Anti-Mission brethren tell us that they are not opposed to *Bible missions*, but only to the modern missionary system. Actions speak louder than words. If the modern Baptists, who claim to be the "Old School" or "Primitive" Baptists, have ever sent out a missionary, either to the home or foreign field, I have not been informed of the fact. What "Hard-Shell" church has ever employed a missionary, upon the Bible or any other plan? They are emphatically *Anti-Mission* Baptists.

But were the ancient Baptists, up to the time of the separation, *Missionary* or *Anti-Missionary*? In his Letters to Dr. Watson, Dr. Howell says: "But it is particularly  
*Letters to Dr. Wat-* to the fact, that the Philadelphia Asso-  
*son, p. 9.* ciation, from our earliest account of it,  
was a missionary body, that I wish to call  
your attention. To place this beyond dispute, I shall  
quote a few items from the official records of that body.



But first, if you please, turn to Benedict's History of the Baptists, vol. II, p. 99, etc.; and you will see that in 1753—that is, eighty-four years ago—the Philadelphia Association sent Elder John Gano as a missionary to the churches in North Carolina, which were soon after formed into the Kehukee Association. The next year, 1754, the association sent two other missionaries to assist him—Elders Benjamin Miller and Peter P. Vanhorn—by the instrumentality of whose united labors these churches, previously deranged, and nearly what Campbellites now are, were reclaimed and set in order, and many sinners were converted. Yes, my brother, even the KEHUKKEE Association, now distinguished for its bitterness and proscription of missionaries, was collected by missionary labor.” In this quotation it is shown, that the largest and most influential association in America, the Philadelphia, was a *missionary* body, and that the Kehukee Association was formed, as the fruits of the labors of her missionaries—eighty years prior to the Hard-Shell separation.

We are informed by Benedict, the historian, in his chapter on Virginia, that the first Baptist church in that State was organized by Robert Nordin, a missionary, who sailed from England in 1714. His brother missionary, Thomas White, who sailed with him, died before they reached America; but Elder Nordin was joined, a few years after his arrival, by two other missionary preachers—Casper Mintz and Richard Jones—from England, who aided in planting the first Baptist churches in Virginia and North Carolina. These Baptists were so filled with the missionary spirit that a few families, which moved to North Carolina, “in ten years became sixteen churches.” Thus, in

*His. Bapt., Benedict, p. 642.*

examining the history of the *old* Baptists of America, more than one hundred years before the Hard-Shell separation, we find that these *old* Baptists were *missionary* Baptists.

Again: Dr. Howell, in his Letters to Dr. Watson, has furnished us with the following valuable account of the missionary work of the old Baptists, not “Hard-Shells,” of the old Charleston Association: “The Charleston Association, honored for its antiquity, piety, intelligence, and orthodoxy, was formed the 21st day of October, 1751.

*Letters to Dr. Watson,* pp. 10, 11.

In 1755, four years after its constitution, and eighty-two years ago, there is this record—[Furman’s History of the Charleston Association, Charleston edition of 1811, pp. 10, 11, etc.]: ‘The Association, taking into consideration the destitute condition of many places in the interior settlements of this and the neighboring States (then provinces), recommended to the churches to make contributions for the support of a missionary to itinerate in those parts. Mr. Hart was authorized and requested, provided a sufficient sum should be raised, to procure, if possible, a suitable person for the purpose. With this view he visited Pennsylvania and New Jersey in the following year, and prevailed with Rev. John Gano to undertake the service, who attended the annual meeting, and was cordially received. The association requested Mr. Gano to visit the Yadkin first, and afterward to bestow his labors wherever Providence should appear to direct. He devoted himself to the work. It afforded ample scope for his distinguished piety, eloquence and fortitude; and his ministrations were crowned with remarkable success. Many embraced and professed the Gospel. The following



year he received from the association a letter of thanks for his faithfulness and industry in the mission.'” Thus we see, that the *old* Baptists of the old Charleston Association were *Missionary* Baptists. And it will be abundantly proved that the Anti-Mission brethren are the “New School” Baptists. We again call the attention of the reader to the doings of the Philadelphia Association, which is the oldest and most influential Association in America. This association was organized in 1707, one hundred and sixty-three years ago, and has continued to the present time. The minutes of this association for one hundred years are preserved in book-form. And in the minute of 1766 we have the following record: “After prayer, it was moved and agreed: that

it is most necessary for the good of the Baptists’ interest, that the association

*Phil. Bapt. Asso.*  
p. 97.

have at their disposal, every year, a sum of money. Accordingly, it was further agreed: that the churches, henceforth, do make a collection every quarter, and send the same yearly to the association, to be by them deposited in the hands of trustees; the interest whereof only to be by them laid out every year in support of ministers traveling on the errand of the churches, or otherwise, as the necessities of said churches shall require.” And, also, in

the year 1794, we have the following action of this association: “In consequence of information communicated to the association by Brother William Rogers, it is desired that all donations for the propagation of the Gospel among the

*Phil. Bapt. Asso.*  
p. 298.

Hindoos in the East Indies, be forwarded to him.” And in the next year we have the following: “Agreed, that the churches be advised to make collections for the



*Phil. Bapt. Asso.* missionaries to the East Indies, and for-  
p. 307. ward the same to Dr. Rogers.”

The character of this body is set forth in the language of H. G. Jones, the editor of these minutes, as follows: “The Philadelphia Association, from the first, has engaged

*Phil. Bapt. Asso.* earnestly in efforts for the proper education  
p. 5. of its ministers and the spread of the Gos-  
pel in the world. Rhode Island College,

now Brown University, received its patronage and contributions from its origin, as the subsequent minutes show. It will be seen also, that, from the first, it has been an effective missionary body. Hundreds of churches have been gathered by the able and self-denying men, sent out at its expense to regions where no religious privileges had before been enjoyed. The aborigines were not overlooked in this labor of love. Among other efforts, the Rev. David Jones, before the American Revolution, made a missionary excursion, at his own expense, to the Indians of what was then the ‘Far West’.”

From the foregoing reliable documents, and others which might be introduced, it is fully settled that the American Baptists, from the very first down to the Hard-Shell separation, were missionaries. And, instead of the Anti-Mission brethren being entitled to the appellation, “Old Baptists,” by way of distinction, they are “a new fangled

*Letters to Dr. Wat-* set of Baptists, never heard of until within  
*son,* p. 8. the present century.” So it is altogether

a misrepresentation, to call the Anti-Mission brethren *Old Baptists*. It not only does injustice to the Regular Baptists of America, but it also tends to confirm the Anti-Mission brethren in their opposition to the spread of the Gospel, through missionary labor.

In regard to the names assumed by the Anti-Mission brethren, Mr. Benedict says: “*Old School and Primitive Baptists* are appellations so entirely out of place, that I can not, even as a matter of courtesy, use them without adding, *so-called*, or some such expression.

I have seen so much of the missionary spirit among the old Anabaptists, Wal-

*His. Bapt., Ben.,*  
p. 935.

denses, and other ancient sects; so vigorous and perpetual were the efforts of those Christians, whom we claim as Baptists, in the early, middle, and later ages, to spread the Gospel in all parts of the world, among all nations and languages where they could gain access, that it is plain that those who merely preach up predestination, and do nothing, have no claim to be called by their name.”

But were our denominational ancestors of the Old World Anti-Mission Baptists? No. The *Old English Baptists* were thorough missionaries. Mr. Benedict describes their General Association as follows: “The year 1689 was a distinguished epoch in the history of the English Baptists, on account of the General Assembly, which then convened in

*His. Bapt., Ben.,*  
p. 336.

London and published a confession of faith, which was long a standard work among them. This assembly was composed of delegates from upward of a hundred [one hundred and seven] congregations, from different parts of England and Wales. They met Sept. 3d, and continued in session nine days; a narrative of their proceeding was published soon after.” One item of business transacted in this body is recorded thus: “At this Convention the denomination, among other things, resolved to raise a fund for missionary purposes, and to assist feeble churches; also for the

*His. Bapt., Ben.,*  
p. 336, note 1.



purpose of ministerial education.—*Rippon's Register* for 1796." This was an association of Particular Baptists, which met one hundred and forty-three years before the Hard-Shell withdrawal. And they raised funds for *missionary* purposes and ministerial education; therefore, they were not Anti-Mission Baptists. So, these *Old English* and *Welsh Baptists* were "Missionary" Baptists. But, again, all admit that the *Old Welsh Baptists* were as true to the cause of Christ as any others. Were they Anti-Mission Baptists? No. For several centuries the *Welsh Baptists* had been prevented by cruel persecutions from meeting in large bodies or associations, and carrying out their plans of united efforts in the mission work; but as soon as an opportunity was offered, they met again in an associational capacity. Davis, in his *History*, gives the following account of the association which met at Abergavenny in 1653, one hundred and seventy-nine years before the Hard-Shell secession: "In the association held

*Davis' History of Welsh Bapt., p.85.* at Swansea, 1654, the Church at Llantrisant proposed to assist the Church at Abergavenny, now Llanwenarth, to support their minister; which also they did. From the messengers of Llantrisant, also, the proposal to revive the ancient order of things, came the preceding year; that is, to encourage and support the missionary cause. Let our brethren in the New World look and stare at this, especially our Anti-Missionary friends! Be it known unto them, that in the year 1653, in the Welsh Association held at Abergavenny, county of Monmouth, South Wales, collections were made, when the Welsh Church subscribed to raise a fund for missionary purposes. Their plan was, for the messengers of every church to mention a certain sum,





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



world. The Holy Spirit is the Missionary of the Father and the Son, *sent* to comfort the disciples and to reprove sinners, etc.

The twelve apostles were missionaries, sent by Jesus Christ to publish salvation to sinners. Their missionary field was at first limited to the land of Judea, but after the enlargement of the commission, the field is the world. The commission was not given to the disciples in their apostolic character. If this were the case, the authority of the commission ceased with the apostolic office. Neither was it given to them in their ministerial character only; for, if this were the case, all ordinations by church authority would be mere assumption; and the ministry would have no necessary connection with, or dependence on, the churches. But the commission was given to them in their church capacity; and, consequently, it remains with the churches to this day. While the Savior was with his disciples, in person, he retained in his own hands all authority in his kingdom. But, before his ascension to the Father, he clothed his church with the executive authority in his kingdom. So that, not even an inspired apostle, or all of them together, ever attempted to perform a church act, except as ministers or servants of the churches. The apostles did not presume to appoint a successor to fill the vacancy occasioned by the fall of Judas, but this was done by the church, composed of men and women. But, did this Jerusalem church, established by Christ himself, send out missionaries? Yes; for it is said in Acts: "Then tidings of these things came unto the ears of the church which was at Jerusalem: and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as Antioch." Yes; this model church sent out a missionary to



a heathen city to preach the Gospel. This was a foreign mission. Thus, we have seen that the church organized by the personal ministry of Christ, was a *missionary* church; for she *sent forth* Barnabas to Antioch to preach the Gospel. And this Church at Antioch, gathered by missionary labor, sent out Barnabas and Paul, on a mission to the heathen. This is recorded thus: “And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent them away. So, they being sent forth by the Holy Ghost, departed unto Selucia: and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.” *Acts 13: 3, 4.* And after these eminent missionaries had preached the Gospel successfully to many heathen cities, they returned to the same church and made a report of their labors and success in their mission, which is thus recorded: “And when they were come, and had gathered the church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how he had opened the door of faith unto the Gentiles.” *Acts 14: 27.* We have now discovered that the churches at Jerusalem and Antioch were missionary churches. And of a certain brother, Paul said: “And we have sent with him [Titus] the brother, whose praise is in the Gospel throughout all the churches; and not that only, but who was also chosen of the churches to travel with us,” etc. *2 Cor. 8: 18, 19.* This brother was *chosen of the churches* and sent on a mission; and these brethren were called “messengers of the churches.”

As we have shown that the model Church at Jerusalem, and some of the churches planted by the apostles, were missionary, it is evident that all those churches were of the same character, from the fact that they were organized under the direction of the Spirit. And, in re-

gard to the support of these missionaries, Paul said,  
1 Cor. 9: 14. “Even so hath the Lord ordained that they  
which preach the Gospel should live of the  
Gospel.” Here is the *foreordination* and *decree* of God  
for the support of the ministry. And more—the apos-  
tle Paul ventured to take *wages* for his support in the  
2 Cor. 11: 8. missionary work. He said, “I robbed other  
churches, taking wages of them, to do you  
service.” But if a modern missionary should do the  
same thing, it would be considered, by some of our anti-  
brethren, a very high crime. The great ado made by our  
brethren concerning *missionary boards*, and the manner of  
raising means for the support of our missionaries, appears  
to me to be altogether puerile. The emphatic command  
of Jesus Christ to his missionaries, is, *to go and preach  
the Gospel to every creature*. The minister can frame no  
excuse for the neglect of this urgent command. But for  
a bitter controversy to arise about the mode of travel,  
whether the missionary should go on foot, as did Christ  
and some of the apostles; on horse-back, in a carriage,  
or by ship, would amount to the supreme of the ridicu-  
lous. And of the same nature, to my mind, is the mod-  
ern controversy about the means of sending funds to the  
missionaries in the field. We regard it as of very small  
moment whether the “wages” for missionary support be  
the fruit of individual donations, whether in or out of the  
church, or of the liberality of one or many churches; and,  
whether these *wages* be sent to him by a messenger ap-  
pointed by one church or many, or whether these wages  
are collected and forwarded by a missionary board ap-  
pointed for that purpose, is of small consequence. These  
matters do not enter into church organization, but they



are pecuniary transactions left to the taste or convenience of the brethren, so that all things are done honestly in the fear of God.

To my mind it would be just as suitable for the Anti-Mission brethren to contend that no missionary should ride on horse-back, because the Saviour rode an ass; or, that no Christian has a right to travel by rail, because neither Christ nor the apostles traveled in this way! I would not undervalue, in the least, any law or command of Jesus Christ, but would urge strict obedience to all the requisitions of Heaven. And I consider it a positive command, resting on the churches of Christ, to execute the commission *to preach the Gospel to every creature*. This they must do to the extent of their ability, through their servants, the ministry; otherwise they are guilty before God, of disobedience to a positive command of our Savior.

---

#### SECTION V.—THE ANCIENT REGULAR BAPTISTS IN FAVOR OF MINISTERIAL EDUCATION.

Baptists freely admit, “That not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called.” But, at the same time, they hold, with Paul, that the minister of Christ should “study to show” himself “approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.”

1 Cor. 1: 26.  
2 Tim. 2: 15.

The Regular Baptists of America, from whom the Anti-Mission brethren seceded, were in favor of ministerial education from the very first.

This fact is fully settled by reference to the Minutes of

the Philadelphia Association, which was the representative of Baptist practice on this continent for many years. In the Minutes of 1722, more than a hundred years before the Hard-Shell separation, we have the following record of the action of this association: “It was pro-

*Phil. Bapt. Asso.*  
p. 27. posed for the churches to make inquiry among themselves, if they have any young persons hopeful for the ministry, and inclinable for learning; and if they have, to give notice of it to Mr. Able Morgan before the 1st of November, that he might recommend such to the Academy on Mr. Hollis, his account.” And some time after this the Rhode Island

College, now Brown University, was established under the patronage of the association, for the education of young Baptist ministers. And in the year 1769, “All the ministers of this association have explicitly engaged to exert themselves in endeavoring to raise more for the same purpose”; *i. e.*, for the education of young ministers.

Again, in the Minutes of 1789, we have the following:

*Phil. Bapt. Asso.*  
p. 246. “After conferring upon the necessity and importance of raising a fund for the education of pious and promising young men for the ministry, we, the members present, do engage to promote subscriptions in our respective churches and congregations, for said purpose; and to bring in the monies raised, with the subscription papers, to the next association, to be at their disposal.”

The question is now settled; the real *Old Baptists* of America were hearty in the support of ministerial education.

The opposition among Baptists to the education of the



ministry is a modern development. By an examination of the Minutes it will be seen that “The Philadelphia Association, from the first, has engaged earnestly in efforts for the proper education of its ministers and the spread of the Gospel in the world. Rhode Island College, now Brown University, received its patronage and contributions, from its origin, as the subsequent Minutes show.” Among English Baptists, Bristol College was established, by the liberality of Mr. Terrill, under the patronage of Broad Mead Church. This Baptist College went into operation in the year 1710, more than a hundred years before the Anti-Mission division. A vast number of ministers have been educated in this college, several of whom emigrated to America and aided in planting our early churches. And also, in the General Association of Baptists, which convened in London in 1689, it was “resolved to raise a fund for missionary purposes, and to assist feeble churches; also, for the purpose of ministerial education.”

*Phil. Asso., p. 5.*

*See Cramp's His. Bapt., p. 409.*

*Ben. His. Bapt., p. 336, note 1.*

Thus the question is made out, that the real old English Baptists were in favor of ministerial education. But the question may still be asked—Were the Dutch Baptists in favor of ministerial education? Of them Mr. Cramp remarks:

“During their troubles, it was impossible to carry into effect any educational plans. When peace was restored, the desirableness of securing an educated ministry became a matter of earnest consideration. Sound views were entertained, and

*Cramp's Bapt. His., p. 265.*



a college was established at Amsterdam, which has proved a great blessing to the denomination.”

This college was established by the Dutch Baptists about the close of the sixteenth century, about two hundred and fifty years before the Hard-Shell opposition to ministerial education.

The ancient Baptists were not only favorable to the education of ministers, but they also favored the education of the masses. Robinson gives an account of a Baptist female school, in Bohemia, in the time of the reign of Uladislaus II., as follows:

“They kept a school for young ladies, and their mode of education and the purity of their manners were in such high repute, that the daughters of a very great part of the nobility of Bohemia were sent thither to be educated; and their bitterest enemies say, they kept the young ladies from the company of the other sex, and formed their manners with so much innocence, that there was nothing reprehensible except the one single article of heresy.”

Here we have the account of a Baptist female school hundreds of years before the “Hard-Shell” opposition to education. The ancient Waldensian Baptists were also in favor of education. Perrin says:

“In the year 1229, the Waldenses had already spread themselves in great numbers throughout all Italy. They had ten schools in Valcamonica alone, and they sent money from all parts of their abode in Lombardy, for the maintenance and support of said schools.” So the ancient Waldenses were not “Hard-Shells” on the school question. They supported denominational schools in the year 1229, more

*Rob. Eccl. Res.,*  
p. 532.

*Perrin's History*  
*Waldenses, p. 117.*





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



## CHAPTER III.

## AMERICAN BAPTISTS.

1. ROGER WILLIAMS WAS NEVER A MEMBER OF A TRUE, LEGITIMATE BAPTIST CHURCH.
2. THE NEWPORT, AND NOT THE PRESENT PROVIDENCE FIRST CHURCH, THE OLDEST BAPTIST CHURCH IN AMERICA.
3. NO PRESENT BAPTIST CHURCH OR MINISTER HAS BAPTISM BY SUCCESSION FROM ROGER WILLIAMS.
4. BAPTIST MINISTERS FROM EUROPE WHO AIDED IN PLANTING THE EARLY AMERICAN CHURCHES.

## SECTION I.—ROGER WILLIAMS WAS NEVER A MEMBER OF A TRUE, LEGITIMATE BAPTIST CHURCH.

While the Baptists are peculiar in every leading feature in their church organization, they are equally so in regard to their history. The church succession of all other denominations is interrupted by a human origin of recent date, or merged into the succession of the Romish apostacy; but the Baptists claim a succession independent of Rome, or any other worldly establishment, directly up to the time of Christ on earth. The false representation, that the “Missionary” Baptists originated with the “Old School” or Anti-Mission Baptists, has been fully met in the last chapter. And our succession, as Regular or Missionary Baptists, carries us beyond the “Hard-Shell” separation. And our succession, reaching back to the time of the settlement of the American colonies, is undisputed. In following up our history, during this period of two hundred and forty years, many have been the trials and



persecutions to which our brethren have been subjected. We find them in Virginia and Massachusetts, suffering reproaches, fines, banishments, imprisonments and whipping, for their unwavering attachment to Baptist principles. Baptists have, in every age, been the firm supporters of civil as well as religious liberty. Therefore, in the Revolutionary War, they stood with Washington, in defense of American liberty, against the British yoke. And, as will be seen in the sequel, American liberty owes its existence to Baptist influence.

But in following up the Baptist succession, we are again met by the stereotyped charge, *that the American Baptists all sprang from Roger Williams, and their baptisms from his informal baptism; and consequently their chain of succession is broken.* And this charge, that Roger Williams is the father and founder of the Baptist denomination in America, is attempted to be sustained by the statement of Mr. Benedict, as follows: "In 1639, he [Roger Williams] was baptized by Ezekiel Holliman, a layman who was appointed by the little company for the purpose; then he baptized the rest of the company, and thus laid the foundation for the first Baptist church in Providence, and on the American continent."

*Ben. His. Bapt.,  
p. 441.*

Now, if there was no uncertainty concerning the correctness of the above statement, it would prove nothing in regard to the origin of the Baptist churches of America. It would be entirely gratuitous to infer that all the churches on the continent sprang from this, even if it had been the first church organized in America. Many churches have been organized from which no other churches have originated. But Mr. Benedict himself was *confused*



and *unsettled* in regard to the Roger Williams affair. And after writing the above, he makes the following remarks: “The more I study on this subject, the more I am unsettled and confused. As to his retiring soon from the pastoral office, there can be no dispute; but whether this was on account of the burden of public duties, or from embarrassments in his feelings, is a point by no means clear. \* \* \* It has been said that he joined with the Seekers—because dissatisfied with all church organizations, with his lay-baptism, etc.—and waited for the revival of a new and apostolical order of things.”

The fact that Benedict was, in mind, “unsettled and confused” in regard to the Roger Williams affair, renders his testimony on this subject of but little value. No man can speak or write clearly and definitely upon a subject about which he is “unsettled and confused.” I would not impeach the veracity of Mr. Benedict as a historian; but I only propose to introduce, from other historians, the facts necessary to settle the points upon which he was unsettled. And, by way of settling these points, we will now proceed to show *that Roger Williams was never a member, much less the founder, of a true, legitimate Baptist Church.* On this subject, Mr. Backus, the historian, says: “Mr. Williams had been accused before of embracing principles which tended to Anabaptism; and in March, 1639, he was baptized by one of his brethren, and then he baptized about ten more. But in July following, such scruples were raised in his mind about it, that he refrained from such administrations among them. Mr. Williams discovers in his writing, that as sacrifices and other acts of

*Ben. His. Bapt.,*  
p. 443.

*Backus, Ch. His.,*  
p. 50.



worship were omitted by the people of God, while his temple lay in ruins; and that they were restored again by immediate direction from Heaven, so that some such direction was necessary to restore the ordinances of baptism and the supper, since the desolation of the church in mystical Babylon.”

We here learn from Mr. Backus that, within four months after his baptism, Mr. Williams retired from his position as pastor of his society, and renounced his own baptism as invalid, and waited for the ordinances of baptism and the supper to be restored by immediate direction from Heaven. And as he rejected the church ordinances, which are essential to church existence, he therefore rejected all claims for his society to be a Church of Christ. And, as he thus repudiated the claims of his society to be a church at all, he thereby rejected all claims to have been a church member. The question may be asked, “What is the cause of the confusion concerning the history of the Providence church?”

The answer is found in the history of the first Baptist church in America, by S. Adlam, from which I make several quotations. Mr. Adlam says: “The church at Providence never has had any  
creed or any covenant; till the year 1700

*First Bapt. Ch. in America, p. 24.*

it had no meeting-house, but, in fine weather, worshiped in a grove, and, when inclement, in private houses. Not till the year 1775, had it any regular records. Can we be surprised that, in tracing the history of such a body, a hundred years after its origin, unless ancient writers are carefully studied, that material errors will be made?” It thus appears that the first church in Providence had no written records for more than a hundred years after its



organization. And it will also appear that the compiler of these records was incompetent to the task, from the fact that he made several gross errors in regard to known facts. As an example of his blunders, Mr. Adlam inserts, from the Church Records, the following: “‘Rev.

Thomas Olney succeeded (Gregory Dexter) to the pastoral office. He was born at Hertford, in England, about the year 1631, and came to America in 1654; but when baptized or ordained, is not known. He was the Chief who made a division about the laying on of hands. He and others withdrew, and formed a separate church, but it continued only a short time. He died June 11, 1722, and was buried in his own field.’ Difficult would it be, in the same amount of language, to find so much misconception and error as here. Never should Thomas Olney, to whom justice has not yet been done, have been spoken of thus. The writer, doubtless, intended to be correct; but so little did he know of history, that he confounded two individuals, probably father and son, together. If he alludes to the son, then it was not in his, but in his father’s day that the division occurred. If he alludes to the father, then he died, not in 1722, but forty years before—in 1682. This confusion of persons and dates, would invalidate any testimony. But this is not all. Olney is placed as the successor of Brown, Wickenden, and Dexter. In the ministry, he preceded them all, and never was pastor of the church which they set up. The records say that he was the Chief who made the division, and that he, and others with him, withdrew and formed a separate church. It was Wickenden and his associates that went off; and even Dr. Hague says, ‘it was

*First Bapt. Ch. in America*, pp. 26, 27, 28.



they who formed the separate church.' The records say that he came to Providence in 1654; he was town treasurer of that place in 1639.

But I forbear. It may be said that the records speak not of the father, but of the son. Then where is the evidence that the Olney who died in 1722, was pastor of Wickenden's church after Dexter's death; that he made a division about laying on of hands; that he withdrew and formed a separate church? Is there a single ancient writer that has recorded it, or alluded to it? And if the son be alluded to, where, in giving an account of Baptist ministers in Providence, is the father alluded to—that ancient man in whose day a division did take place; and who saw, in 1652, his church receive such a wound, that, after sixty years' struggling for existence, it at last expired? Look, also, at Chad. Browne; he is made pastor of the church ten years before it began to exist! But I will pursue this subject no further. What is the value of records like these? And yet it is by these records, and documents like them, that the Providence church carries date back to 1639, claims to be the first in the State, and the oldest of the Baptists in America."

It is of these imperfect Church Records, compiled by John Standford one hundred and thirty-six years after the formation of the Roger Williams Society, that Mr. Benedict says: "The author, Messrs. Knowles, Hague, and all historians since, have been indebted to them for the few details which have been preserved of the doings of this ancient community." And, in a foot-note, Mr. Benedict further remarks: "My present historical details are taken partly from my first volume, and partly from Hague's

*His. Bapt., Ben.,*  
p. 457.



Historical Discourse, delivered in 1839, at the expiration of two hundred years from the founding of the church. But the Church Records are the only source of information to us all.”

It is here shown, by Mr. Benedict, that all the historians who make the present first church of Providence the Roger Williams church, depend alone upon the Church Records, compiled by Mr. Stanford, for all their information concerning this church. But Mr. Adlam has shown, from the records themselves, that they are not to be relied on, because of the numerous contradictions of known historic facts. And as we have already shown, Mr. Benedict was *unsettled* and *confused* concerning Roger Williams and the Providence church. And that Mr. Benedict's mind was not clear concerning the history of Roger Williams, is seen in the following: “And what but the

*His. Bapt., Ben.,* strength of prejudice could lead to such untiring efforts as have been put forth for almost two centuries past, to manufacture capital against the denomination from the obscure or apochryphal history of this solitary man?”

Full enough has been produced to show that the confusion and obscurity in the mind of Benedict and others, was produced by the confused and obscure records of the old Providence church. But developments have been made which are amply sufficient to settle those points which were so difficult to Mr. Benedict.

It has already been seen, from Mr. Backus, that Roger Williams repudiated his baptism and church relationship in four months after the organization of his society. We will now proceed to show that his society also disbanded,





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



beginning of 1641. He inquired, with great diligence, into the ecclesiastical affairs of the country, and gave a faithful account. Against the Baptists he had no special prejudices more than against the Congregationalists, for he was an Episcopalian. But whatever were his own convictions, I have gained, in many respects, a more exact view of New England, during these four years, from him than from any other person. When speaking of Providence, he says: ‘At Providence, which is twenty miles from the said Island (Rhode Island, which he had also visited), lives Master Williams and his company, of divers opinions; most are Anabaptists. They hold there is no true, visible church in the *Bay*, nor in the world, nor any true ministry.’ Mark this account. It is from an eye-witness, about a year and a half after Williams renounced baptism, churches, ministry, and all.”

With such an array of evidence, that Roger Williams, with his church, within a few months after its formation, renounced their baptism and church organization, and even affirmed that there was no true church in the world, how passing strange that any one, much less a Baptist, should have conceived the erroneous idea that Roger Williams was the founder of a Baptist church at all. And as no one pretends that Roger Williams ever belonged to a Regular Baptist church, but only to his own little anomalous society, which fell to pieces in a few months; therefore, it is evident that *Roger Williams was never a member of any true, legitimate Baptist church.*

After a thorough investigation of all the facts and records, Mr. Adlam makes the following concluding remarks: “Among the evils that have resulted from the wrong date of the Providence church, has been the prominence given



to Roger Williams. It is greatly to be regretted, that it ever entered into the mind of any one to make him, in America, the founder of our denomination. In no sense was he so. Well would it be for Baptists, and for Williams himself, could his short and fitful attempt to become a Baptist, be obliterated from the minds of men. A man only four months a Baptist, and then renouncing his baptism forever; to be lauded and magnified as the founder of the Baptist denomination in the New World! As a leader in civil and religious liberty, I do him homage; as a Baptist, I owe him nothing.”

*First Bapt. Ch. in Amer<sup>a</sup>, p. 39.*

---

SECTION II.—THE NEWPORT, AND NOT THE PRESENT PROVIDENCE CHURCH, IS THE OLDEST BAPTIST CHURCH IN AMERICA.

Not long after the dissolution of the Roger Williams Society, which only existed a few months, Thomas Olney, one of the persons baptized by Williams, gathered a church at Providence. Some historians have made Olney the successor of Williams in the pastorate over the Williams church. He was the successor of Mr. Williams as pastor in Providence, not over the Williams church, but over the one gathered some time after the Williams church came to nothing. So, Olney's church was the second formed in Providence, over which he officiated as pastor till his death, in 1682. But about the year 1652, a division occurred in the Olney church; a number of members broke off and formed a six-principle Baptist church. This new church was formed under the leadership of Elders Dexter, Wickenden, and Browne, who were



Elders together in its formation, and succeed each other in the pastorate of this church. That there were two Baptist churches in Providence as early as 1652 or '53, is an undisputed historic fact. Mr. Adlam introduces the testimony of Mr. Staples, as follows: "Staples, in his an-

*First Bapt. Ch. in America, p. 7.*

nals of Providence, says: 'There were two Baptist churches in Providence as early as 1652; one of the six-principle, and the

other of the five-principle Baptists. This appears from a manuscript diary kept by John Comer, a Baptist preacher in Newport.'"

Again, Mr. Adlam introduces Comer thus: "Comer, in his manuscript, spells Wickenden's name, as it was probably pronounced, *Wigginton*; and his exact words are: 'Mr. William Vaughn, finding a number of

*First Bapt. Ch. in America, p. 8.*

Baptists in the town of Providence, lately joined together in special church covenant, in the faith and practice, and under

the inspection of Mr. William Wigginton, being heretofore members of the church under Mr. Thomas Olney, of that town, he—*i. e.*, Mr. William Vaughn—went thither in the month of October, 1652, and submitted thereto (to the imposition of hands), upon which he returned to Newport, accompanied with Mr. William Wigginton and Mr. Gregory Dexter, etc.'"

Once more—Mr. Callender says: "'About the year 1653 or 1654, there was a division in the Baptist church at Providence, about the

*First Bapt. Ch. in America, p. 8.*

rite of laying on of hands, which some pleaded for as essentially necessary to church communion, and the others would leave indifferent. Hereupon they walked in two churches: one under C. Browne, Wickenden, etc.; the other under Thomas Olney.'—Page 114."



From the above documents, and others which might be introduced, it is clearly shown that about the year 1652 or 1653, there was a division in the Olney Providence church about the laying on of hands before communion, and that Wickenden, Dexter and Browne, were the leaders, who went off and formed the new church, which was the third church formed in Providence. This was the six-principle church, which, as will be seen, has continued to the present time, and is known as the First Church in Providence. But Mr. Olney continued as pastor over the old interest, which was the second church in Providence. This is further shown, in the language of Mr. Backus, the historian, as quoted by Mr. Adlam, as follows: "Thomas Olney, senior, also died this year, (1682). He was next to Mr. Williams in the pastoral office at Providence, and continued so to his death, over that part of the church who are called five-principle Baptists, in distinction from those who parted from their brethren about the year 1653, under the leading of Elder Wickenden, holding the laying on of hands upon every church member."

*First Bapt. Ch. in America, p. 9.*

But which of these two Providence churches—Olney's five-principle church, or the seceded six-principle church, under Wickenden, etc.—is the present first church in Providence? We answer, in the language of Mr. Adlam: "Two things show that the existing is the seceding church. 1st. Every writer, including the record, mentions Browne, Wickenden and Dexter, as former pastors of that church. 2d. The present church, from 1652 until 1770, was known only as six-principle, while Olney's was

*First Bapt. Ch. in America, p. 11.*



the five-principle church. From this it follows, that the existing church in Providence was not founded in 1639, but 1652; it was not the first church in the State, for it came out from an older church; it is not the oldest of the Baptists in America, for the Newport church was founded, unquestionably, eight years before; and so far from Roger Williams being its founder and first pastor, he was in England when it was founded; and thirteen years before, he had ceased to be a Baptist. It also follows, that the time when Roger Williams was baptized, has nothing to do in determining the age of the present church.”

Thus, it is shown that the present Providence church, which was organized in 1652, by Wickenden, Dexter, and Browne, has taken, instead of her own date, the date of the Roger Williams Society. But what became of the old Olney five-principle church. Mr. Adlam says: “A

*First Bapt. Ch. in Amer., pp. 16, 17.* melancholy interest invests the last notice we have of this ancient church. It continued till early in the last century, when it became extinct, leaving no records, and but few events in its history behind. The fullest information of it I have found, is in a note by Callender, on the 115th page of his Discourse. Speaking of this church, he adds below: ‘This last continued till about twenty years ago, when, becoming destitute of an elder, the members were united with other churches;’ and further adds, ‘At present there is some prospect of their re-establishment in church order.’ This was written in 1738. The church had then been extinct about twenty years; that is, it lost its visibility about 1718. Morgan Edwards says, that the church under Olney continued till 1715: so that it continued, after the division in 1652, for more than



sixty years, when, discouraged, they scattered, never to be united again. And thus passed away the original church, and the waves of time have almost obliterated its remembrance from the minds of men. Callender indeed thought, when he wrote, that it might be re-established, and in this he would have rejoiced, as it would have afforded him a church that would hold communion with him and with the people under his care; but he was disappointed, and for more than one hundred and thirty years the old church in Providence is among the things that were."

From the foregoing facts and dates, it is fully settled that the present Providence first church, which was the third organization in that place, was not organized prior to the year *sixteen hundred and fifty-two*. It can not, therefore, be the first church in America, from the fact that all historians agree that the Newport church was organized as early as 1644. And granting this to be the true date of the Newport church—which I will show to be a mistake—it makes the Newport church eight years older than the present Providence church. Our earliest writers ascribe this priority to the Newport church.

Mr. Adlam quotes John Comer as follows: "Comer, the first, and, for the early history of our denomination, the most reliable of writers, ascribes, distinctly and repeatedly, this priority to the Newport church. He had formed the design, more than a hundred and twenty years ago, of writing the history of the American Baptists; and in that work, which he only lived to commence—but which embraces an account of this church—he says in one place, 'that it is the first of the Baptist denomination.' And,

*First Bapt. Ch. in  
America, p. 19.*



closing his history of it, says, ‘Thus I have briefly given some account of the settlement and progress of the first Baptist church of Rhode Island, in New England, and the first in America.’ ”

What right have we to invalidate the emphatic statement of John Comer, the first Baptist historian of America, upon the “confused” evidence of Mr. Benedict, who confesses that he gets all his information from the Church Records, which have been shown to be incorrect? And more—later developments have established the fact, that the Newport church is not only the first church in America, but that it was established in 1638, one year before the Roger Williams church was formed. This is clearly made out from a note in the Minutes of the Philadelphia Association, as follows: “When the first church in New-

*Phil. Bapt. Asso.,* port, Rhode Island, was one hundred years  
p. 455. old, in 1738, Mr. John Callender, their minister, delivered and published a sermon

on the occasion.” Yes; in the year *seventeen hundred and thirty-eight*, the first church in Newport was *one hundred years old*. This gives us *sixteen hundred and thirty-eight* as the true date of the organization of the Newport church. This date is also confirmed by the inscription on the tombstone of Dr. John Clark, who organized this church. As this inscription contains important facts and dates, which should be preserved, I give it entire, as follows:





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



stated. And it is emphatically stated, and graven in the rock, *that Dr. John Clarke came to this Island in March, 1638, and that "he shortly after gathered the church aforesaid, and became its pastor."*

As he gathered the church shortly after he came to Rhode Island, it must have been gathered in the year *sixteen hundred and thirty-eight*—one year before the "thing like a church," formed by Roger Williams, was born. On this point Mr. Adlam says: "After all the investigations

*First Bapt. Ch.  
in Amer., p. 45.*

I have made, I have come to the conclusion that the true date of the Newport church is 1638, and that any other is altogether arbitrary. My reasons for these views are the following: We know that in the year 1638, a church was formed on the Island, and Dr. Clarke became its pastor; and we have no information that that church ever became extinct. On the Island, there is no allusion to such an event in any record; nor does tradition ever speak of our church but as the original church on the Island: other churches came out from us—we from no other."

We consider it a point now fully made out, that *the Newport, and not the Providence church, is the oldest Baptist church in America.*

---

### SECTION III.—NO PRESENT BAPTIST CHURCH OR MINISTER HAS BAPTISM, BY SUCCESSION, FROM ROGER WILLIAMS.

*It can not be shown that any present Baptist church or minister has received baptism by succession from Roger Williams.*—Our adversaries seem to think, that if they can prove that the Roger Williams Society was the first



Baptist church established in America, they have established the position that all the Baptists of America have descended from Roger Williams. They point to Roger Williams with an air of triumph, and say: "Here your chain of succession is broken." But if it could be shown, which is not the case, that the Roger Williams Society was the first Baptist church in America, this would have no more to do with the genealogy of Baptist churches in America than the discovery of America by Columbus has to do with the origin or genealogy of the citizens of this country. Suppose some political logician should draw the conclusion, that because Columbus was the first discoverer of America, therefore all the inhabitants of America are the descendants of Columbus! What would be thought of such reasoning? No man of common-sense would receive such teaching. But thousands who are influenced more by prejudice than reason or revelation, are ready to say with one voice, that "the Baptists of America sprang from Roger Williams, because he was the founder of the first Baptist church on this continent!"

Such persons exhibit the disposition of the animal in the manger, which could not eat hay himself and was determined that the ox should not. They have no succession themselves except the Romish, and they are determined to cut off the Baptist succession. But we are asked, "Does not Mr. Benedict say, that the old Providence church was the prolific mother of many Baptist communities?" But this was not said concerning the Roger Williams church, which, as already shown, came to nothing in a few months after its formation; nor of the Olney church, which also, after a series of years, became extinct; but it

*Ben. His. Bapt.,*  
p. 459.



was said concerning the church established about 1652, under Dexter, Wickenden and Browne, neither of whom received their baptism from Roger Williams. And Gregory Dexter was a Baptist preacher in London before he came to Providence, in 1644. So that even the Providence church was organized by a minister whose succession extends to the English Baptists.

On this point, Mr. Graves says: "It can not be shown that any Baptist church sprang from Williams' affair. Nor can it be proved that the baptism of any Baptist minister came from Williams' hands."

*Tri-Lemma*, pp.  
121-124.

The oldest Baptist church in America is the one now existing, with her original articles of faith, in Newport, R. I.; and she was planted by Dr. John Clarke, before Williams was baptized.

He received his baptism in Elder Stillwell's church, in London, and that church received hers from the Dutch Baptists of Holland—sending over a minister to be baptized by them. These Baptists descended from the Waldenses, whose historical line reaches far back, and connects with the Donatists, and theirs, to the apostolical churches.

A writer in the *Christian Review* condenses the facts of history into the following eleven statements, which can be confidently relied upon:

'1. Roger Williams was baptized by Ezekiel Holliman, March, 1639; and immediately after, he baptized Mr. Holliman and ten others.

'2. These formed a church, or society, of which Roger Williams was the pastor.

[3.] 'Four months after his baptism—that is, in July



following—Williams left the church, and never afterward returned to it. As his doubts respecting baptism and the perpetuity of the church, which led to this step, must have commenced soon after his baptism, it is not likely that he baptized any others.

‘4. The church which Williams formed, came to nothing, or was dissolved soon after he left it.

‘5. It was re-organized, or another was formed, a few days afterward, under Mr. Thomas Olney as its pastor, who was one of the eleven baptized by Roger Williams. Olney continued to be pastor of this church until his death, in 1682, somewhat over thirty years.

‘6. In 1653 or 1654, which was a few years after the formation of Olney’s church, there was a division in that church on the question of ‘laying on of hands’ in the reception of members; and a separate church was formed for the maintenance of this ceremony, under the pastorate of Chad. Browne, Wickenden, and Dexter. This church was perpetuated, having, in 1808, given up its original faith as to the ‘laying on of hands,’ and is now the First Baptist Church in Providence.

‘7. The parent church, under Olney, gradually dwindled away, and became extinct about the year 1718, some seventy years from its origin.

‘8. No church was formed from Olney’s, after the division already mentioned, and no ministers are known to have gone out from it. Olney’s baptism, whether valid or invalid, was not propagated.

‘9. Nearly a century passed before the church formed from Olney’s began to colonize, in 1730.

‘10. None of its ministers, or the ministers of the churches formed from it, received their baptism from



Williams, or from any one whose baptisms descended from his.

‘11. The Baptist churches of America, then, could not have descended from Roger Williams, or from the temporary society which he formed. Their true descent is from the Baptist churches of Wales and Piedmont, extending back to the apostles’ times.’ ”

The items set forth in this quotation are fully sustained by the facts of history. It is both offensive and invidious, for those who ought to know better, to persist in the circulation of the *false* representation that Roger Williams was the *founder* of the American Baptists. Those who make this charge are wholly inexcusable; for, if they are ignorant of Baptist history, they should not affirm concerning that about which they are not informed; but, if they know the facts in the case, and still persist in the charge, they are evidently dishonest and unworthy of respect. Who will undertake to trace the succession of any living Baptist to Williams? If our enemies—for enemies they are who make such charges—will make no attempt to sustain their allegations, let them be regarded with that compassion which is due from us toward the *false accusers* of the servants of Jesus Christ.

---

#### SECTION IV.—BAPTIST MINISTERS FROM EUROPE WHO AIDED IN PLANTING THE EARLY AMERICAN CHURCHES.

It has already been fully shown that the Baptists of America have not descended from Roger Williams. And it now becomes a matter of great interest to know where they came from.



The Baptists of America number over a million members, and Baptist churches are numbered by thousands, whose ministers are proclaiming their heaven-born doctrine to the remotest corners of the world.

These churches must have been planted by the agency of some person or persons.

I now proceed to give a list of the names of some of our brethren who were regularly baptized and ordained in Europe; and who, having fled to the American wilds for an asylum which was denied them, aided in the planting of the early Baptist churches from which, as flowing streams, the denomination has come down to us. At the head of this bright catalogue of names, I place the imperishable name of Dr. JOHN CLARKE, who received his baptism and ordination in London, in a church whose succession extends in a regular line back to the apostolic age. John Clarke was a man of uncommon eloquence and learning, and possessed with a burning zeal for the cause of his Master, which caused him to preach the cross of Christ in Massachusetts in spite of the laws to the contrary; and which, after his imprisonment, caused him to accept a challenge from the Governor (John Endicot), to debate with the learned dignitaries of the established church, in defense of Baptist doctrine. But, after giving the challenge, these renowned theologians backed out from the proposed controversy with this unconquered prisoner.

1. JOHN CLARKE was born in Bedfordshire, England, in 1609. He came to this country, as a Baptist minister, from London. He settled, at first, in Massachusetts; but fled from persecution, and arrived in Rhode Island in March, 1638; and in the same year established the first



Baptist church on the continent of America, in Newport, R. I.

This church is standing yet, with its original constitution, as a monument of the truth for which its founder suffered. John Clarke, by his influence with the king of England (Charles II.), secured the charter granting civil and religious liberty to the colony of Rhode Island, which afterward was extended over the whole country. The Newport *first church* has, from time to time, sent out numerous branches to form other churches. This church, as already seen, was formed in 1638, *one year prior to the informal* baptism of Williams; and yet, it would not be proper to call John Clarke the founder of the American Baptists. He was only *one* of many who aided in the organization of churches.

John Callender, the historian of Rhode Island, says of John Clarke: "He was a faithful and useful minister, courteous in all the relations of life, and an ornament to his profession and to the several offices which he sustained. His memory is deserving of lasting honor, for his efforts toward establishing the first government in the world which gave to all equal civil and religious liberty. To no man is Rhode Island more indebted than to him. He was one of the original projectors of the settlement of the Island, and one of its ablest legislators. No character in New England is of purer fame than John Clarke."

*Cramp's Hist.  
Bapt., p. 478.*

2. THOMAS GRIFFITH, from South Wales, emigrated with the church of which he was pastor, in the year 1701. They settled, at first, near Pennepek, in Pennsylvania, where they remained two years, and finally settled at Welsh Tract, in Pennsylvania (now Delaware), in 1703.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



suffered persecution under Charles II., and also in Massachusetts. So we find that the first church in the Bay State was regularly organized by a Baptist preacher from Europe.

4. ROBERT NORDIN was ordained as a Baptist minister in London, in 1714, and immediately sailed for Virginia; and on his arrival he organized a church at Burley, in the Isle of Wight county, which was the first Baptist church organized in the State of Virginia. And members emigrating from this church spread the cause of truth in North Carolina, and in a short time sixteen churches were organized. Thus we find that the *first church* in Virginia was regularly organized by a missionary who received his baptism and ordination in England; and that from this church many of the early churches in North Carolina derived their origin. Will any one dare to affirm that the Virginia and North Carolina Baptists sprang from the Roger Williams affair? Nothing except bitter prejudice or ignorance could have originated the mistake that Williams was the founder of the Baptists in America. It is high time that professed Christian men had confined themselves within the bounds of truth.

5. MORGAN EDWARDS, who was born in Wales, 1722, and educated in Bristol College, which is a Baptist institution, in England, commenced preaching in his sixteenth year. And by the urgent request of Dr. Gill and other London ministers, he took passage and arrived in America in the year 1761, and became the pastor of the church at Philadelphia. Mr. Edwards was a man of learning and en-

*Ben. His. Bapt.*,  
p. 642; also,  
*Backus' Ch. Hist.*,  
p. 229.

*Davis' His. Welsh  
Bapt.*, pp. 77-79.



ergy. He wrote extensively. Among his productions may be mentioned his "Materials toward a History of the Baptists in Pennsylvania." This is said to be a valuable collection. It may be found in the library at Newport.

6. SAMUEL JONES, of South Wales, with a number of other Baptists, emigrated to America in the year 1686; and settled on the banks of the Pennepek, in Pennsylvania, and went into church organization at that place.

*Davis' His. Welsh Bapt., p. 67.*

7. ABEL MORGAN, of Wales, who was an influential Baptist minister and pastor in his native country, and arrived in America, 1711, and took the care of the church in Philadelphia. He was a man of learning. He compiled a folio Concordance to the Welsh Bible, which was printed in Philadelphia in 1730. It is a popular error to suppose that all the early Baptist ministers of this country were uneducated men.

*Davis' His. Welsh Bapt., p. 69.*

8. WILLIAM DAVIS came to Pennsylvania from Wales as a Baptist minister.

9. HUGH DAVIS, with eight other members of Swansea church, of South Wales, received a letter of dismissal and emigrated to Pennsylvania in 1710. He was a Baptist minister in Wales, and became the founder and first pastor of the church at Great Valley, Chester county, Pennsylvania. While one church emigrated in church capacity, in other cases members were lettered off in order to enter into church organization as soon as they should arrive in this country.

*Davis' His. Welsh Bapt., p. 90; also, Phil. Asso., p. 16.*

10. DAVID EVANS, from Wales, came to America as a



*Davis' His. Welsh Bapt., p. 101.* Baptist preacher. We do not possess the details of the labors of all these men of God who planted the standard of truth in America.

11. NATHANIEL JENKINS. This eminent Baptist minister, of Wales, emigrated to America at an early day, about 1701. He became pastor of the church at Cape May, West Jersey. It would be interesting to have the details of these pioneer Baptists.

*Davis' His. Welsh Bapt., p. 103.* 12. GRIFFITH JONES, who was the able pastor of Hen-goed church, in Wales, emigrated to America in 1749, and became a member of the Welsh Tract Church and associate pastor with David Davis. It will be borne in mind that the majority of these standard-bearers labored in the pastoral work on both sides of the Atlantic ocean. They were truly *pilgrims* and strangers on the earth.

*Davis' His. Welsh Bapt., p. 138.* 13. CALEB EVANS was born in South Wales, educated at Bristol College, came to America as a Baptist minister, and settled at Charleston, South Carolina, about 1778. It has already been noted that the early Baptists of South Carolina were of Welsh origin. Some of their ministers came directly from Wales, while others came from the Welsh church in Rhode Island.

✓ 14. JOHN BURROWS came from the west of England as a Baptist minister in 1711, and labored first in Philadelphia, then removed to Middletown, in 1713. We are not in the possession of the details of this Baptist preacher, more than that he was an acceptable minister of Jesus.

*Phil. Bapt. Asso., p. 12.*



15. RICHARD JONES, a Baptist preacher from England, settled in Virginia in 1727, where he labored thirty years in the ministry. He labored in the field previously occupied by Robert Nordin, who preceded him as the pioneer Baptist of the *Old Dominion*. The succession of the Virginia Baptists is back to England. *Ben. His. Bapt., p. 642.*

16. CASPER MINTZ came from England and settled in Virginia, 1727. He spent about thirty years in the ministry. He was the associate of Richard Jones; they both arrived in Virginia two years after the death of Robert Nordin. *Ben. His. Bapt., p. 642.*

17. JOHN EMBLEM, from England, became the co-pastor with Mr. Hull, in Boston, in 1684. The Baptists of Boston were sorely persecuted and harrassed by the standing order in the early part of their history. *Cramp's Bapt. Hist., p. 470.*

18. ELISHA THOMAS came from Wales as an original member of the Welsh Tract Church. He reached this country in 1701. Though he was ordained in this country, he was baptized in Wales. He received his ordination from the old Welsh Tract Church.

19. ENOCH MORGAN also came as one of the original members of the Welsh Tract Church. He was also ordained in this country. Other names could be given of ministers whose succession was directly from Europe, but we close this list with one name more.

20. GREGORY DEXTER was a Baptist preacher in London, who came over to Providence, Rhode Island, in 1644. He was associated with Wickenden and Browne, as one of the founders of the present Providence first church. He was the first who taught the art of printing in New Eng-



land. He was a man of remarkable piety ; and lived a devoted minister to the advanced age of ninety years.

Thus we see, after all the smoke and noise raised about the Baptists of America descending from Roger Williams, that it turns out that even the Providence first church has a regular *succession*, through her founders, back to England.

*It can not be proved that any Baptist now living in America, or elsewhere, has received baptism, by succession, from Roger Williams.* Those few Baptists among us who have been received among Baptists on their “alien” immersions, are nearer to the *Roger Williams succession* than any others.

Here are the names of a score of the many Baptist ministers who received their baptism regularly in Europe, and emigrated to this country in early times ; they aided in bearing the Baptist standard, and planting Baptist churches throughout the colonies of America. These self-sacrificing Baptist ministers toiled amidst dangers, persecutions, stripes, and imprisonments, to the end of their lives, in extending Baptist principles, and organizing Baptist churches on this continent. But, after all, shall the whole honor of these mighty labors be ascribed to one who only partially embraced Baptist principles for four months, was never regularly baptized, never belonged to a true Baptist church, was never ordained to the ministry, and repudiated all baptism and church organization during the remainder of a life of *forty-three* years ? True, Williams was a firm advocate of religious liberty ; but this was nothing new to Baptists, for they had contended for this, as a fundamental principle, through the dark ages of Popish tyranny from the apostolic times.



The peculiar circumstances which surrounded Roger Williams, have inscribed his name high on the rolls of fame as a great benefactor of the human race. But, long before the time of Williams, multiplied thousands of unflinching Baptists patiently suffered, and poured forth their blood in maintenance of the same boon of heaven—religious liberty.

And why is it that the illustrious names of these mighty hosts of Baptist martyrs who perished in filthy dungeons, wandered in lonely exile amidst mountain snows and deserts wild, or embraced the martyr's stake amidst the curling flames which consumed their bodies, are left to moulder in the dark tomb of forgetfulness, while the name of Williams, one of the founders, not of the Baptists, but of Rhode Island colony, is exalted to the highest pinnacle of denominational fame? Why, I ask, is his name held up as the founder of the Baptist denomination in America? Is it because he embraced the Baptist doctrine of "*soul liberty*?" So did George Washington, with many of our revolutionary sires, who were not Baptists. And as well might it be claimed that Washington was the founder of the Baptist denomination in America! Especially, if he had received baptism from Gen. Green, Gates, or some one else having no connection with the Baptists, then this would have constituted him the father and founder of the Baptist denomination in America!

The illustrious Patrick Henry was the friend and defender of persecuted Baptists of Virginia; and he, as fully as Roger Williams, embraced the doctrine of "*soul liberty*"; why not constitute him the founder of the Baptist denomination in Virginia?

No: there is a purpose to serve in thus exalting Roger



Williams. It is to make the impression on the minds of the multitude that Williams was the founder of the Baptist denomination in this country, and thereby bring the Baptists on a par with the denominations, or societies, which have an admitted human origin and founder.

We have grouped together the names of twenty Baptist ministers, who crossed the Atlantic ocean and planted the standard of the Cross in the American deserts, so that the wilderness has been made to blossom as the rose. They organized Baptist churches in Rhode Island, Massachusetts, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, and the Carolinas; and from these, like flowing streams, the denomination has spread over the mighty West. I am thoroughly satisfied that the most obscure of these early ministers named has as good claim to be canonized as the founder of the Baptists in America, as Roger Williams. Our connection with the European churches is so strongly developed that, besides the multitude of ministers who emigrated, vast numbers of private members were lettered off, and emigrated to this country, and formed an important element in the organization of our early churches. And, as we have already seen, one church, now the Welsh Tract, emigrated from Wales to this country in her organized capacity. This church is now located in the State of Delaware. She became the "prolific mother," that sent out many ministers and colonies to form churches. The Welsh-Neck church, in South Carolina, was formed of members of this *old mother* church. Benedict himself, so far from teaching that Roger Williams was the founder of the Baptist denomination in America, upon the question of our origin, says: "The Welsh Baptists began to emigrate to this country in very early times, and by them





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



from the Welsh and English Baptists, through the ministry of *John Miles*, *John Emblem*, and others; that the Pennsylvania Baptists had their origin from Wales and England, through the ministry of *Morgan Edwards*, *Samuel Jones*, *Abel Morgan*, *Hugh Davis*, and others; that the Virginia Baptists had their origin mainly from the English Baptists, through the ministry of *Robert Nordin*, *Richard Jones*, *Casper Mintz*, and others; and that the North and South Carolina Baptists had their origin from the English and Welsh Baptists, through the ministry of *Caleb Evans*, from Wales, and missionaries from the Philadelphia Association, with emigrants from the Virginia Baptists. From these early centers of Baptist operations in the Atlantic States, the tide of Baptist emigration has flowed westward, till the voice of the Baptist ministry is heard among the savages of the *far West*, and even on the shores of the Pacific ocean.

Especially, in Kentucky, do we find the descendants of the Virginia Baptists. Of these pioneers, might be mentioned the names of the *Craigs*, the *Wallers*, and others, who had the honor to preach Jesus Christ through the iron bars of their prisons in Virginia. No Baptist need be ashamed of his denominational ancestors who, in the infancy of the American colonies, came from England and Wales, and some from other countries, and planted the tree of civil and religious liberty in the New World, where they finally succeeded in enstamping these cherished principles on the American Government, and have thereby been the means of giving religious liberty to a continent. It will be well for Baptists to be ever mindful of the cost at which *soul-liberty* has been purchased



---

to this country ; and while this boon of heaven remains ours, we should improve the golden opportunity of fixing the same principles in the hearts of the masses of mankind. We should work while it is called to-day.



## CHAPTER IV.

## ENGLISH BAPTISTS.

1. THE ENGLISH BAPTISTS DID NOT ORIGINATE WITH JOHN SMITH.
2. THE ENGLISH BAPTISTS ARE DESCENDED FROM THE GERMAN BAPTISTS.

## SECTION I.—THE ENGLISH BAPTISTS DID NOT ORIGINATE WITH JOHN SMITH.

At the outset we found the Baptists of America distinguished from all other denominations by certain leading peculiarities, numbering between one and two millions of members; and pushing the victories of the Cross from Maine to Western Texas; from the Atlantic to the Pacific ocean; from the Eastern States to the far Western States and Territories of the Pacific slope.

They are the most intensely aggressive and powerful denomination on the continent. We found them untrammelled by fines, and unfettered by imprisonments, with no ecclesiastical task-masters over them to apply the cruel scourge, or to consume them to ashes for their supposed heresies.

Notwithstanding, the Baptist doctrine of *soul-liberty* has so completely permeated every department of society (whether civil or religious), that Baptists are now allowed to worship God under their own vine and fig-tree, and none dares, legally, to molest or make them afraid; yet, the very name *Baptist*, is odious to a large number of re-



ligionists, who seem to feel fully authorized to pour out their vials of wrath upon Baptists, in denunciations, misrepresenting their doctrine, and perverting their history. And in the Baptists is verified the prediction of our Savior: "Ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake."

In following up the Baptist succession, it has been fully shown that their historic chain has neither been disturbed by the secession of the "Hard-Shell" Baptists, nor the *apostacy* of the Campbellites; and it has been abundantly shown that the Roger Williams affair has not even produced a ripple upon the flowing stream of Baptist succession.

The *Atlantic Cable* of succession connecting the Baptists of Europe and America, is composed of numerous cords in the persons of Baptist ministers, members, and even churches, which emigrated to this country. How grand and poetic the occurrence of a Baptist church leaving their native homes in Wales, with all the endearing ties of kindred and friends, to undertake the dangerous experiment of a voyage across the Atlantic ocean to the then wilderness of America, to plant the standard of a pure Christianity among the savages of the New World.

Poets and statesmen have united to swell the sounding praises of the May Flower and its cargo of Pilgrims, who only fled from persecution to become themselves the bitter persecutors of the hated Baptists and Quakers. But, what bard, historian, or statesman, is kind enough to give the name, mark the course, and record the incidents of the voyage of that favored vessel, which conveyed the Welsh Tract church from the shores of Europe across the briny deep, to find a home in the deep, tangled forests



of America, where they might unfurl the banner of religious liberty, which should never be stained by the foul blot of persecution? Or, who can furnish the history of that ship which bore the heroic John Clarke from London to the American shores? Must it be left to ocean winds and waves to sing the praises of these pioneers of the Baptist denomination in America? Perchance these favored vessels were guarded in their perilous voyages by angelic legions, who have treasured up in the archives of heaven the details of the adventures and sufferings of the members of the "sect" which is every-where spoken against. We find the name of the vessel in which the Welsh Tract church sailed, preserved by Davis in his *History of the Welsh Baptists*. Mr. Davis says: "In the year 1701, he (Thomas Griffiths) and fifteen of the members of the church went to America in the same vessel. They formed themselves into a church at Milford, in the county of Pembroke, South Wales, and Thomas Griffiths became their pastor in the month of June, 1701. They embarked on board the ship *James and Mary*, and on the 8th day of September following, they landed at Philadelphia. The brethren there treated them courteously, and advised them to settle about Penepeck. Thither they went, and there continued about a year and half. During that time twenty-one persons joined them, but finding it inconvenient to abide there, they purchased land in the county of Newcastle, and gave it the name of Welsh Tract, where they built a meeting-house, and Thomas Griffiths labored among them as their pastor till he died, on the 25th of July, 1725, aged eighty years." How deeply interesting must have been the church meetings of this Baptist church when they gathered

*Davis' His. Welsh Bapt., p. 72.*



for the worship of God, from time to time, as they sailed on the bosom of the mighty deep, and rode the boisterous waves of the stormy ocean. And when first they met in church meetings in the wilds of Pennepeck and Welsh Tract, surrounded by savage beasts and still more savage Indians, how solemn must have been their devotions. In ascending the stream of Baptist succession, we have passed from the scenes of persecution, fines, imprisonments, and stripes, in Virginia and Massachusetts, up to the planting the first American churches; and from thence across the broad Atlantic back to the mountain fastnesses of Wales, and the Baptist churches of England. But where did the English Baptists originate? We are told by some, who profess to be our friends, that the English Baptists originated with one *John Smith*, who baptized himself and others; and thus originated the Baptists of England. And here, they tell us that the Baptist chain of succession is broken.

Mr. Thomas Wall shows his aversion of Baptists by the following statement: "One John Smith, being more desperately wicked than others, baptized himself, and then he baptized others, and from this man the English *Anabaptists* have successively received their new administration of baptism on men and women only."

*Crosby's His. Eng. Bapt., vol. I, p. 95.*

Is it a fact, that the Baptists of England originated, as charged, from John Smith the Sebaptist? Instead of this, it will be seen that John Smith was never an English Baptist in his life. As to the dispute, whether John Smith baptized himself or not, this has no bearing on the question of the rise of the English Baptists. The English Baptists have been fearfully misrepresented by their adversaries, who have delighted, it appears, to dip their pens



in the “juice of gall” when writing concerning the hated Anabaptists. Crosby, the historian, remarks on this point:

“Notwithstanding so much which has  
*Crosby's His. Eng. Bapt., pref., vol. III, p 48.* been said, and much more which might have been said, in favor of the *English*

*Baptists*, yet there is hardly any party or denomination of Christians that have been so basely misrepresented, and unkindly treated in the world, as they. Whenever there has been any persecution, they, if any in those countries, have been sure to feel the hottest part of it. The books written against them are not only very numerous, but commonly filled with foolish and scandalous stories, to render them *odious*; and the histories of this people, that are yet extant, are, for the most part, such as have been published by their greatest adversaries.” And from all the developments in the case, the se-baptism of John Smith is one of those silly stories circulated by the enemies of Baptists. Mr. Ivimey says, on this question:

“There is no doubt but this silly charge  
*Ivimey's His. Eng. Bapt., vol. III, p. 115.* was fabricated by his enemies; and it is an astonishing instance of credulity, that

writers of eminent talents have contributed to perpetuate the slander.” It is now pretty well settled that John Smith received his baptism like Roger Williams; viz: he and one of his companions are supposed to have baptized each other, and then the rest of the company. With us it is of little consequence whether Smith was baptized by himself or one of his unbaptized company; for in neither case could his baptism be valid. I have gathered the following facts in regard to John Smith and his company:—*First.* John Smith was a minister of the established Church of England. *Second.*





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



selves, contrary to the order appointed by Christ, and who now desire, on this account, to be brought back to the true Church of Christ as quickly as may be suffered.

We unanimously desire that this, our wish, should be signified to the church.

NAMES OF MEN.

“HUGH BROMHEAD,  
JARVASE NEVILLE,  
JOHN SMYTH,  
THOMAS CANADYNE,  
EDWARD HANKIN,  
JOHN HARDY,  
THOMAS PYGOTT,  
FRANCIS PYGOTT,  
ROBERT STANLEY,  
ALEXANDER FLEMING,  
ALEXANDER HODGKINS,  
JOHN GRINDALL,  
SOLOMON THOMPSON,  
SAMUEL HALTON,  
THOMAS DOLPHIN.

NAMES OF WOMEN.

ANN BROMHEAD,  
JANE SOUTHWORTH,  
MARY SMYTH,  
JOAN HALTON,  
ALIS ARNFIELD,  
ISABEL THOMSON,  
MARGARET STANLEY,  
MARY GRINDALL,  
MOTHER PYGOTT,  
ALIS PYGOTT,  
MARGARET PYGOTT,  
BETTERIS DICKINSON,  
MARY DICKINSON,  
ELLYN PAYNTER,  
ALIS PARSONS,  
JOANE BRIGGS,  
JANE ARGAN.”

The above confession may also be found in Latin, on page 244 of Evans' Early Eng. Bap. His., Vol. I.

*Eighth.* After Mr. Smith and his party were “cast out” from his own church, and confessed their error in setting up for themselves, on their humble petition, they were received into a Mennonite church, whose “mode of baptism was by sprinkling or affusion.”

*Ninth.* Not long after this, 1610, John Smith died in Holland. He never returned to England. He never



belonged to any English Baptist church; neither did he ever belong to a legitimate Baptist church at all.

*Tenth.* Mr. Helwys, the early companion of Smith, returned to England with a few of the remnant of Mr. Smith's company, in 1611 or 1612. This was the second division in the John Smith church, which had excluded its founder.

*Eleventh.* The remnant of the John Smith church left in Amsterdam, united with the Mennonite church in 1615, and thus became extinct.

*Twelfth.* After the return of Helwys to London, he formed a church, which is claimed as the first General Baptist church in England. *Crosby's His. Eng. Bap't., vol. I, p. 270.* His labors, however, were not attended with very great success. And admitting it to be true that this Helwys church was the first church in England called General Baptists, this does not prove that the General Baptists of England originated with this church. History develops the fact that even the General Baptists of England did not, as a class, receive their succession and baptism either from John Smith or Mr. Helwys.

How strange that the mania of prejudice should have ever conceived the idea of constituting John Smith the founder of the English Baptists!

This unfortunate man desired to know and practice the truth. In his flight from Babylon, he left the Episcopalians and joined the Brownists, who excluded him for opposing their traditions. He then proceeded to administer baptism and organize his society, which some historians call a *Baptist church*, from which he was also soon excluded. And he, with his party, denied his baptism and church organization, professed repentance, sought ad-



mission, and was received into a Mennonite church, which, according to Mr. Evans, was not a Baptist church at all. And yet our adversaries will point to John Smith as the founder of the English Baptists!

I now close this section on the Smith affair, with the testimony of Mr. Crosby, the historian, as follows: “If he (John Smith) were guilty of what they charge him with, ’tis no blemish on the *Crosby’s His. Eng. Bapt., vol. I, p. 99.* English Baptists; who neither approved of any such method, nor did they receive their *baptism* from him.”

Here is the testimony of the English Baptist historian, who affirms that the *English Baptists did not receive their baptism from Smith.* The English Baptists are certainly as well qualified to tell their own origin as any others.

---

## SECTION II.—THE ENGLISH BAPTISTS ARE DESCENDED FROM THE GERMAN BAPTISTS.

We now come to the direct question—“Where did the English Baptists originate?” Historians admit that persons holding Baptist views, have existed in various parts of England and Wales from very early times. This may be seen from the proclamations and edicts of kings against the hated “Anabaptists.” The same is shown by Davis, in his *History of the Welsh Baptists*; and by Crosby, Orchard, and Evans, in their histories of English Baptists.

It is an egregious mistake to suppose that the English Baptists had their rise since the Reformation of the sixteenth century. But, owing to the fierce and continued persecutions waged against them, they were accustomed, as much as possible, to conceal themselves from public



view. They frequently met in private houses, or barns, and even in the thick forest in the dead of night, for the worship of God ; but whenever they were detected by the vigilance of Papal spies, they were seized and delivered over to the vengeance of the secular arm. And from the fact that all their books and records were diligently sought and burned by their enemies, we have but little material for history, except the prejudiced statements and edicts of their enemies. We are, however, able to furnish many instances of the emigration of German Baptists to England in these early times. Many of the early Baptists of England were called Lollards.

Mr. Crosby, the historian, says: "In the time of King *Edward* the Second, about the year 1315, *Walter Lollard*, a German preacher, a man of great renown among the *Waldenses*, came into England ; he spread their doctrines very much in these parts, so that afterward they went by the name of *Lollards*."

*Crosby's His. Eng. Baptists, vol. II, pref., p. 46.*

That these Lollards were Baptists, who had their descent through the German Baptists, from the ancient *Waldenses*, is shown by Mr. Orchard. "The Lollards' Tower," in which these witnesses for Christ suffered, still stands in London, as a monument of Papal cruelty toward these ancient English Baptists. Of the Baptists of England, "Bishop *Burnet* says: 'At this time (Anno 1549) there were many *Anabaptists* in several parts of *England*. They were generally *German*s, whom the revolutions there had forced to change their seats.'" In this we have the testimony of *Burnet*, that the early English Baptists, called

*Orchard's Eng. Bapt., p. 118.*

*Crosby, vol. I, pref., p. 18.*



Anabaptists, were from Germany, and were numerous, long before the John Smith affair, in Holland. In the year 1538, King Henry VIII., issued a proclamation against the *Anabaptists* (Baptists) and others; and in the same year, Archbishop Cranmer received a commission “to inquire after Anabaptists, to proceed against

them, to restore the penitent, to burn their books, and to deliver the obstinate to the secular arm.” And of this time,

*Crosby, vol. I,*  
p. 38.

“Mr. Fuller tells us, ‘that in this year, a match being made by the Lord Cromwell’s contrivance, between King *Henry* and the Lady *Anne of Cleve*, *Dutchmen* flocked faster

*Crosby, vol. I,*  
p. 39.

than formerly into *England*, and soon after began to broach their strange opinions, being branded with the general name of *Anabaptists*. These Anabaptists,’ he adds, ‘for the main, are but *Donatists*, new dipt; and this year their name first appears in our *English Chronicles*. I read,’ says he, ‘that four *Anabaptists*, three men and one woman, all *Dutch*, bare faggots at *Paul’s* cross; and three days after, a man and a woman of their sect, were burnt in *Smithfield*.’ ”

This is the testimony of Thomas Fuller, a historian of the Church of England, that Dutch Baptists (Anabaptists) flocked into England in the year 1538, in the reign of Henry VIII., long before the time of John Smith.

But we have still more direct testimony concerning the succession of the more modern English Baptists, from whom the Baptists of America descended. In the year 1633 a large number of Pedobaptists, belonging to the Independents, became convinced of the correctness of Baptist principles. They were puzzled at first as to the best



method of obtaining valid baptism. They appointed one of their number, Richard Blunt, to visit Holland and there receive baptism from a church which was known to be in the regular succession from the ancient Waldenses. Mr. Crosby introduces the testimony of William Kiffin as follows: "This agrees with an account given of the matter in an ancient manuscript, said to be written by *Mr. William Kiffin*, who lived in those times, and was a leader among those of that persuasion.

*Crosby, vol. I, pp. 101-102; see also, Ivimey, vol. I, p. 143; Neal's His. Pur., vol. II, p. 361; Orchard, vol. II, p. 260.*

This relates, that several sober and pious persons belonging to the congregations of the *dissenters* about *London*, were convinced that *believers* were the only proper subjects of *baptism*, and that it ought to be administered by *immersion* or *dipping* the whole body into the water, in resemblance of a *burial* and *resurrection*, according to Colos. ii: 12, and Rom. vi: 4. That they often met together to pray and confer about this matter, and consult what methods they should take to enjoy this ordinance in its primitive purity: That they could not be satisfied about any *administrator* in *England* to begin this practice; because, though some in this nation rejected the *baptism* of *infants*, yet they had not, as they knew of, revived the ancient custom of *immersion*. But, hearing that some in the *Netherlands* practiced it, they agreed to send over one Mr. Richard Blunt, who understood the *Dutch* language: That he went accordingly, carrying letters of recommendation with him, and was kindly received both by the church there, and Mr. *John Batte*, their teacher: That upon his return he baptized Mr. *Samuel Blacklock*, a minister, and these two baptized the rest of their com-



pany, whose names are in the manuscript to the number of fifty-three.

So that those who followed this *scheme* did not receive their *baptism* from the aforesaid Mr. *Smith*, or his congregation at *Amsterdam*, it being an ancient congregation of foreign *Baptists* in the low countries to whom they sent."

Here we have the undisputed historic fact, that the Baptists of London were so careful to obtain valid baptism that they delegated Richard Blunt, formerly a Pedobaptist minister, to visit a regular Baptist church, at Amsterdam, in Holland, which belonged to the old Waldensean succession. And after the baptism of Richard Blunt by John Batte, by the authority of said church, he returned to London and baptized Samuel Blacklock, and they baptized the rest of the company, to the number of fifty-three members; and thus was formed a Baptist church, which was afterward recognized as a Particular Baptist church. And from this influential church has flown the stream of succession down to the present time.

We have now seen that the English Baptists, instead of originating with John Smith, have descended from the Dutch and German Baptists, who descended from the ancient Waldenses. In following up the succession of Baptists, we have found them in England, suffering almost incredible hardships and persecutions under the bloody reigns of James and his father, Charles II. In these fearful times it was no light matter to become a Baptist. It involved the renunciation of the grandeur and honors of the world, and to become the objects of Papal and Protestant cruelties. They were the faithful martyrs who were hunted down by the blood-hounds, in human form, of the established Church, as though they had been wild





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



classes; because the Protestants were almost as bitter in their persecutions against the English Baptists as were the Catholics. Taking this view of the condition of the Baptists of England at this time, it is no wonder that these Pedobaptists were not well posted in the affairs of the Baptists of England. Their want of knowledge on this point, is no evidence that there were no true Baptists in England at this time. Though some of the English Baptist historians were of opinion that the sending to the continent to get valid baptism was unnecessary, yet it was their duty to do this, if they knew of no Scriptural administrator nearer. No one can plead the authority of the Scriptures for “alien” baptisms. It is certainly much safer to be guided by the example of Jesus Christ and the apostles, in this as all other matters of religious duty.



## CHAPTER V. .

## GERMAN BAPTISTS.

1. THE GERMAN BAPTISTS DID NOT ORIGINATE WITH THE MUNSTER RIOT.
2. THE GERMAN BAPTISTS DESCENDED FROM THE ANCIENT WALDENSES.

## SECTION I.—THE GERMAN BAPTISTS DID NOT ORIGINATE WITH THE MUNSTER RIOT.

It appears that in every age, from the time of Christ, the Baptist denomination has been made the scape-goat to bear the sins of the world. Almost every crime known to earth, has been laid to their charge. They are considered the enemies of governments, ringleaders of sedition and revolution, and obstinate and incurable heretics. It has been supposed that earthquakes, wars, famines, and pestilences, have been sent upon the human family on account of the crimes of the Baptists. And it is now gravely stated, by a certain class of “charitable” writers, who have not the power, as did their fathers, to imprison and burn Baptists, that *the Baptist denomination originated with the Munster riot in Germany, about the year 1525.* And this class of men are generally very clamorous about Baptist “Close Communion.” But did the Baptists originate with the madmen of Munster? Upon an investigation of the history of the Munster affair, the following facts are developed:

1. The Munster rebellion did not arise from any relig-



ious, or denominational, opinions whatever, but in order to resist the oppressions of the despotic governments of Germany. Of the miserable condition of this wretched people, Mr. Robinson, the historian, says: “The condition of the peasants in Germany, in the year twenty-four [1524], was deplorable, if there be anything to deplore in a deprivation of most of the rights and liberties of rational creatures. The feudal system, that execration in the eyes of every being that merits the name of man, had been established in early ages in Germany, in all its rigor and horror. It had been planted with a sword reeking with human gore, in the night of barbarism, when cannibals drank the warm blood of one enemy out of the skull of another, and it had shot its venomous fibers every way, rioted itself in every transaction; in religion, in law, in diversions, in everything secular and sacred, so that the wretched rustics had only one prospect for themselves and all their posterity—one horrid prospect of everlasting slavery.”

*Robinson's Eccl.  
Res., p. 535.*

And of the effort of this unfortunate people to break the iron yoke of tyranny, the author of the Religious Encyclopedia says: “Munzer, and his associates, in the year 1525, put themselves at the head of a numerous army, and declared war against

*Religious Encyc.,  
p. 77.*

all laws, governments, and magistrates of every kind, under the chimerical pretext that Christ himself was now to take the reins of all governments into his hands: but this seditious crowd was routed and dispersed by the Elector of Saxony, and other Princes, and Munzer, their leader, put to death.” The same author adds: “It must be acknowl-

*Religious Encyc.,  
p. 77.*



edged that the true rise of the insurrections of this period ought not to be attributed to religious opinions."

2. The prime movers of the Munster riot were Pedobaptists.

Mr. Benedict says: "It is certain that the disturbances in the very city of Munster, were begun by a Pedobaptist minister, of the Lutheran persuasion, whose name was Bernard Rotman, or Rothman; that he was assisted in his endeavors by other ministers of the same persuasion; and that they began to stir up tumults, that is, teach revolutionary principles, a year before the Anabaptist 'ringleaders,' as they are called, visited the place. These things the Papists knew, and they failed not to improve them to their own advantage. They uniformly insisted that Luther's doctrine led to rebellion, that his disciples were the prime movers of the insurrections, and they also asserted that a hundred and thirty thousand Lutherans perished in the rustic war."

3. If the testimony of their enemies is entitled to credit, the Munsterites, in their practices, very much resemble the Mormons of our day. And it would be as legitimate to charge the Baptists with the Mormon abominations, as with the excesses of the frenzied German peasants of the sixteenth century.

4. The most of these insurgents were of no religion. They entered the rebellion as men driven to desperation, in order to gain their independence. But it is freely admitted that some Catholics, some Lutherans, and some so-called Anabaptists, were engaged in this struggle for freedom.

5. These deluded fanatics were finally destroyed in battle.



Of their destruction Mr. Orchard says: "These oppressed men were consequently met by their lords with a sword, instead of redress; being defeated, they were slaughtered and reproached—the invariable results and concomitants of defeat; Munzer, their friend and chief, was put to death."

*His. Bap., vol. I, p. 356.*

6. It is extremely unjust, therefore, to censure the Baptist denomination for the improprieties of some of its members who were, or may have been, seduced into fanaticism and turbulence. Of the unjustness of these aspersions, Mr. Evans says: "Historians of a certain class, and partisan writers, have been fond of designating as 'Anabaptists,' and gathering around us all those elements of social disorder and fearful profligacy which the scenes of Munster, and the mad vagaries of Stork and his brethren, ever suggest. Hard have they labored to identify us with these men. We are not careful to answer them in this matter. The men that shrunk not from the severe privations of the jail, and the more terrible punishment of the stake, were not affected much by a name. It answered the purpose of their adversaries for a time; but they were blind to the logical consequences of their own position. They forgot, in the fullness of their malice, the retribution to which they were exposing themselves. To trace the sad events which resulted from the efforts to secure social freedom, to the doctrines that the individual consciousness of God's claim on man's affections, and that the Christian profession is only made by an immersion of the individual in water, 'in the name of the Father, of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost'; is only to lay open their own system to

*Evans' Early Eng. Bapt., vol. I, p. 16.*



the most crushing retort. It were just as easy to demonstrate that the world has been the vast theater on which Pedobaptists have perpetrated crimes at which humanity shudders, and over which piety and virtue must weep, as that the Anabaptists, as a body, were found steeped in crime and reveling in lust."

Thus it is shown by Mr. Evans that if the Baptists are liable to censure, simply because some of the Munster fanatics rejected infant baptism, then, on the same principles, the Pedobaptists are chargeable with all the crimes committed by their Catholic ancestors. For instance, who instituted the Inquisition? Pedobaptists. Who preached up the crusades against the ancient Waldenses? Pedobaptists. Who are guilty of the blood of sixty millions of the saints for conscience sake? Pedobaptists. But these things are passed over lightly by our accusers; and because some deluded Anabaptists of Germany joined in a death struggle for liberty, the Baptists, as a denomination, are stigmatized as originating the Munster riot! The injustice of these charges is shown by Mr. D'Anvers, as follows: "That take it for granted, that things were so as to matter of fact, that many Anabaptists did prove so horribly wicked, as *Spanheimius, Sleidan, Osiander*, and others do report, yet how unreasonable and uncharitable would it be to render all this people, either in those times or since, to be such persons also; and to judge an error in the principle from the error in conversation of some that have professed it; for by the same rule may not the purest state of the church, both in the Old and New Testament, be censured and judged; who had their *Chora's, Judas' and Diotrephes'*, among them? But that others that owned

*D'Anvers on  
Bapt., p. 322.*



that principle, were men of another spirit, both in that as well as former and latter times, you have most ample and authentic testimony from their greatest enemies.”

But in no sense can it be stated that the Baptists originated with the Munster rebellion. It would be as legitimate for future historians to contend that the American Baptists originated with the Mormon movement as for one to affirm that the German Baptists started with the Munster movement. It will be seen that the German Baptists existed under the name of Anabaptists long before this unhappy affair. Mr. Brown, editor of the *Rel. Encyc.*, p. 78.

*Religious Encyclopedia* says: “It is but justice to observe, also, that the Baptists in Holland, England, and the United States, are to be considered as entirely distinct from those seditious and fanatical individuals above mentioned, as they profess an equal aversion to all principles of rebellion on the one hand, and of enthusiasm on the other.—*Buck’s Theol. Dictionary; Milner’s Church History; Robinson’s Eccl. Researches; Encyclopedia America; Benedict’s History of the Baptists.*” These writers are too candid to associate the Baptists with the Munster riot. D’Aubigne, an eminent Pedo-

*Quoted Intro. to Orchard, p. 16.*

baptist historian, says: “On one point it seems necessary to guard against misapprehension. Some persons imagine that the [Munster] Anabaptists of the times of the Reformation, and the Baptists of our day, are the same. But they are as different as possible.” This is the testimony of a learned historian, who declares that the Baptists are as *different as possible* from the Munster Anabaptists. Again: we have the testimony of the Royal Encyclopedia, as quoted by Mr. Graves in the Tri-Lemma. Mr.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



speaking of the true Baptists of these times, says: "Their peace principles, and those on oaths, capital punishment, etc., were the same before the rustic war as afterward; and may be traced down, through the history of the Waldenses and other evangelical parties, 'to the remote depths of antiquity.' Menno was, indeed, a distinguished teacher among the Anabaptists during the whole of his ministry; but Mosheim's account of his gathering up the fragments of the society after their dispersion, and re-organizing them upon new and better principles, is not at all sustained by anything that appears in their own relations. They were the same people in policy and practice before Menno came among them as afterward. We see them almost daily on trial in the criminal courts; and never were a people so uniform, and I may say so dauntless, in their religious professions, as were the German Anabaptists for the century and a half now under review. The charges against them seemed to have been stereotyped by the inquisitors, and their answers were uniform as to matters of fact, and always mild and explicit; and, as to the men of Munster or Amsterdam—for the scenes at both places were often referred to—they uniformly answered: '*These were not our brethren—we have no fellowship with such men. The men of Munster were among yourselves,*' or of your party. *They did not admit, or even intimate, that they went off from them, or were ever in their connection. But they bitterly complained of having to suffer for the faults of others that they knew nothing about, because some of them agreed with them in rejecting infant baptism.*" It may be proper to observe here, that the term *Mennonites* has, in history, been applied to different classes of religionists. Menno

*Ben. His. Bapt.*,  
p. 124.



himself, and the most of the Mennonites of his day, were strict Baptists in their religious views; but the modern Mennonites are wholly different: they practice pouring for baptism. When I use the term Mennonites, in this work, as synonymous with Baptists, I refer to the true Baptist Mennonites of old.

---

## SECTION II.—THE GERMAN BAPTISTS DESCENDED FROM THE ANCIENT WALDENSES.

It is a well-known fact that the Dutch, or German, Baptists were called “Anabaptists” and Waldenses interchangeably. Baptists have ever rejected the term “Anabaptist” as not applicable to themselves. It is derived from the Greek words *ana*, anew or again, and *baptizein*, to immerse or baptize; and means, to baptize *anew* or *again*. Baptists have ever held, one Lord, one faith, and *one baptism*; and when they baptize those who have received the infant rite, or have been immersed without the authority of Jesus Christ, they do not regard it as re-baptism, as they regard such performances as invalid—*no baptism at all*. And when, in this work, we speak of the Anabaptists of Germany, we do not allude to the Munster Anabaptists.

There is abundance of historic evidence of the fact that the people called, by their enemies, “Anabaptists,” existed in Germany long before the Munster insurrection; but *how* and *where* did they originate? The witnesses already quoted, show that they descended from the ancient Waldenses. In thus ascending the stream of Baptist history, we have passed unscathed beyond the Munster riot, and find the Baptists still grappling with the combined



powers of the world in support of religious liberty, and the Bible as their only rule of faith and practice. Of the origin of the German Baptists, who were called Menno-  
 nites, Mosheim, the historian, says: “It may be observed,  
*Mos. Church His.,* in the first place, that the Mennonites are  
 p. 491. not entirely in an error when they boast of  
 their descent from the Waldenses, Petro-  
 brusians, and other ancient sects, who are usually consid-  
 ered as witnesses of the truth, in times of general dark-  
 ness and superstition. Before the rise of Luther and Cal-  
 vin, there lay concealed, in almost all the countries of Eu-  
 rope, particularly in Bohemia, Moravia, Switzerland, and  
 Germany, many persons, who adhered tenaciously to the  
 following doctrine, which the Waldenses, Wickliffites, and  
 Hussites, had maintained, some in a more disguised, and  
 others in a more open and public manner, viz: ‘That the  
 kingdom of Christ, or the visible church which he estab-  
 lished upon earth, was an assembly of true and real saints,  
 and ought, therefore, to be inaccessible to the wicked and  
 unrighteous, and also exempt from all those institutions  
 which human prudence suggests to oppose the progress of  
 iniquity, or to correct and reform transgressors.’” This is  
 very important testimony, borne by the learned Mosheim,  
 a Lutheran, who was intensely opposed to the Baptists,  
 and lived in Gottingen, in Germany. Does he tell us that  
 the Mennonites, or “Anabaptists,” originated at Mun-  
 ster? No. He informs us that they existed before the time  
 of Luther and Calvin, in almost all the countries of Eu-  
 rope. In following up the succession of churches, we have  
 now entered upon a period of our history before the Ref-  
 ormation of popery in the sixteenth century. Yes; be-  
 fore—long before—the voice of the Wittenburg reformer





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



title of Anabaptists, but by that of Baptists. It is, however, probable that they derive their origin from the German and Dutch Mennonites, and that, in former times, they adopted their doctrine in all its points."

And speaking of these same Baptists, whom he calls Mennonites, Mosheim says that they "are not entirely in an error when they boast of their descent from the Waldenses, Petrobrusians, and other ancient sects, who are usually considered as witnesses of the truth, in the times of general darkness and superstition." And the same has already been proved in the former section, where it is recorded in the Royal Encyclopedia, that THE BAPTISTS APPEAR SUPPORTED BY HISTORY IN CONSIDERING THEMSELVES THE DESCENDANTS OF THE WALDENSES, WHO WERE SO GRIEVOUSLY OPPRESSED AND PERSECUTED BY THE DESPOTIC HEADS OF THE ROMISH HIERARCHY.

In confirmation of the fact that the Dutch and German Baptists sprang from the original Waldenses, we here introduce a statement from the report from the learned committee appointed by the King of Holland, to prepare a history of the Dutch Reformed Church, in which they devote one chapter to the Baptists. The author of the Encyclopedia describes this committee as follows: "An

*Religious Encyc.*, 'Account of the Origin of the Dutch Baptists,' or Mennonites, was published  
p. 796.

at Breda, in 1819, by Dr. Ypeij, Professor of Theology, at Groningen, and the Rev. I. J. Dermout, Chaplain to the King of the Netherlands, learned Pedobaptists," of the Dutch Reformed Church. These learned men, appointed by royal authority, and living in Holland, having access to the libraries and archives of



Germany, have made their report on the origin of the Baptists. Do they locate their origin with the Munster rebellion? We have their concluding language, as follows:

“We have now seen that the Baptists who were formerly called Anabaptists, and, in latter times, Mennonites, were the original Wal-  
denses; and who have long, in the history of the church, received the honor of that origin. On this account, the Baptists may be considered as the only Christian community which has stood since the days of the apostles, and as a Christian society, which has preserved pure the doctrines of the Gospel through all ages. The perfectly correct external and internal economy of the Baptist denomination, tends to confirm the truth, disputed by the Romish Church, that the Reformation brought about in the sixteenth century, was in the highest degree necessary; and, at the same time, goes to refute the erroneous notion of the Catholics, that their communion is the most ancient.”

This testimony is worthy of being embalmed in the memory of every lover of truth. It is not the language of some “bigoted” Baptist, but the deliberate statement of learned Pedobaptist historians after years of investigation.

Of their testimony, Newton Brown, editor of Religious Encyclopedia, says: “This testimony, from  
the highest official authority in the Dutch

Reformed Church, is certainly a rare instance of liberality toward another denomination. It is conceding all the Mennonites or Baptists claim. It should be added, that they have constantly, but politely, declined the salaries which the government of Holland offers to all denominations under its authority.”



It will not be amiss to emphasize several items which have been settled in this important document:

1. *That the Baptists, who were formerly called Anabaptists, and in latter times Mennonites, were the original Waldenses.*

2. *That the Baptists may be considered as the only Christian community which has stood since the days of the apostles.*

3. *That the Baptists may be considered as the only Christian society which has preserved pure the doctrines of the Gospel through all ages from the apostles.*

4. *And that the Baptist communion is more ancient than the Catholics.*

With these incontrovertible facts before us, will the unblushing impudence of his satanic majesty ever again so far expose the malice of the pit, as to affirm that the Baptists originated with the mad proceedings of the Munster affair?

The learned history, from which this extract in the Encyclopedia was taken, was written in the Dutch language. Prof. T. W. Tobey has translated the entire chapter on the Baptists from the original. This valuable translation may be found in the *Southern Baptist Review* for 1859. This document throws much light on this question. Prof. Tobey informs us that the names of the authors of this history, are "A. Ypeij and I. J. Dermout;" and the name of their work is, "History of the Netherlands' Reformed Church." The work consists in four volumes. We will proceed to furnish several quotations from this valuable work, written by these learned Pedobaptists, who lived in the Netherlands among the people whom they describe. This translation does not materially differ





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



concerning the antiquity of the Baptists, as translated by Prof. Tobey. These historians say : “ We have now seen *Ibid.*, pp. 19, 20. that the Baptists who, in former times, were called Anabaptists, and at a later period Mennonites, were originally Waldenses, who, in the history of the Church, even from the most ancient times, have received such a well-deserved homage. On this account the Baptists may be considered, as of old, the only religious community which has continued, from the times of the apostles, as a Christian society which has kept pure through all ages the evangelical doctrines of religion. The uncorrupted inward and outward condition of the Baptist community, affords proof of the truth contested by the Romish Church of the great necessity of a reformation of religion, such as that which took place in the sixteenth century, and also a refutation of the erroneous notion of the Roman Catholics, that their denomination is the most ancient.”

We have traced a regular succession of Baptists from the shores of America to Wales, England, and Germany, and to the valleys of the Alps, long before the Munster rebellion. We have now entered upon a period of our history prior to the Lutheran Reformation. In this period, prior to the year 1520, we find no Lutherans, Episcopalians, Presbyterians, nor Methodists, and, of course, no Campbellites. But the Baptist denomination here stands alone as the “ pillar and ground of the truth,” as the mighty pyramid of Gospel light, whose apex touches heaven, and whose rays light up the dreary pathway of the dismal ages upon which we are now entering.

We have fully established the historic fact that the Baptists sprang from the ancient Waldenses; and this leads us to the consideration of the next objection.



---

## CHAPTER VI.

### THE ANCIENT WALDENSES.

1. THE NAME WALDENSES.
2. THE CHARGE OF DRS. MILLER AND RICE AGAINST JONES, THE HISTORIAN.
3. ANCIENT WALDENSES BAPTISTS—MODERN WALDENSES PEDOBAPTISTS.
4. THE ORIGIN OF THE WALDENSES.

#### SECTION I.—THE NAME WALDENSES.

The name Waldenses was originally applied to the inhabitants of the valleys of the Alps, but, in after times, it was applied to that class of Christians, everywhere, who embraced the same views with the inhabitants of the valleys. This name has sometimes been applied, by the Roman Catholics, with such latitude as to embrace all the sects which opposed the doctrines of Rome. Therefore, in the perusal of the pages of history, we find the term Waldenses applied to parties of almost every denominational cast. And a failure to observe the proper distinctions in the use of this name, has led some historians to very incorrect conclusions as regards the doctrine of the Waldenses.

It is claimed by some, that the Waldenses derived their name from one Peter Waldo, a merchant of Lyons, who lived in the twelfth century. But this position is now almost universally abandoned. It is a historic fact, fully made out, that the name Waldenses was applied to the



inhabitants of the valleys, as a religious community, long before the time of Peter Waldus. Mr. Jones, the historian, says: “It is also proved from their books, that they existed as Waldenses before the time of Peter Waldo, who preached about the year 1160.” And upon the same point Mr. Waddington remarks: “That we may not fall into the error of Mosheim, who ascribes the origin of that sect to an individual named Waldus. Peter Waldus, or Waldensis, a native of Lyons, was a layman and a merchant; but, notwithstanding the avocations of a secular life, he had studied the real character of his church with attention, followed by shame. Stung with the spectacle of so much impurity, he abandoned his profession, distributed his wealth among the poor, and formed an association for the diffusion of Scriptural truth. He commenced his ministry about the year 1180. Having previously caused several parts of the Scriptures to be translated into the vulgar tongue, he expounded them, with great effect, to an attentive body of disciples both in France and Lombardy. In the course of his exertions he probably visited the valleys of Piedmont; and there he found a people of congenial spirits. They were called Vaudois or Waldenses (men of the valleys); and as the preaching of Peter may probably have confirmed their opinions and cemented their discipline, he acquired and deserved his surname by his residence among them. At the same time, their connection with Peter and his real Lyonese disciples established a notion of their identity; and the Vaudois, in return for the title which they had bestowed, received the reciprocal appellation of Leonists. Such, at least, appears the most proba-

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
p 232.

*Waddington, Ch.*  
*His.,* p. 353.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



people were called Waldenses ; and hence it came to pass that some contended they were Manicheans and Arians, and others that they were the direct opposite.”

Notwithstanding the name Waldenses originally designated the inhabitants of certain Alpine valleys, yet it finally became the general name of a large body of Christians inhabiting many countries. On this point, Mr. Jones

*Jones' Ch. His.,* remarks : “ Such is the view which Reinerius gave of the principles of the Waldenses, about eighty years subsequent to the  
p. 241.

times of Peter Waldo ; and we must understand this description as applicable to one general class of Christians, scattered throughout the south of France, the valleys of the Pyrenean mountains, the valleys of Piedmont, and the country of the Milanese, though probably distinguished, in different places, by the different names of Puritans or Catharists, Paterines, Arnoldists, Leonists, Albigenses or Waldenses, the last of which ultimately became their more general appellation.”

Mr. Jones further adds : “ That the general body of the

*Jones' Ch. His.,* Albigenses received the doctrines of Peter Waldo, that these doctrines had no connection with Manicheism, and that the  
p. 242.

Waldenses and Albigenses were two branches of the same sect, inhabiting different countries, each deriving its appellation from its local residence.” Many other writers might be adduced in confirmation of the fact that the Waldenses received their name originally from the valleys of the Alps. But in addition to the general name of Waldenses applied to the class of Christians who embraced the principles of the original inhabitants of the valleys of the Alps, a multitude of local names and nick-names were



applied to this people. Of these names, Mr. Jones says: “In Languedoc, the Catholics affirm that the origin of these heretics was recent, and that they derived their name of Vaudois, or Waldenses, from Peter Waldo, one of their barbes or preachers, whose immediate followers were called Waldenses. But this was rather the renovation of the name, from a particular cause, than its original. Accordingly, it extended over that district only in France where Peter Waldo preached, for in other districts the people, who were branches of the same original sect, as in Dauphine, were, from a noted preacher, called Josephists; in Languedoc they were called Henricians; and in other provinces, from Peter Bruys, they were called Ptrobrusians. Sometimes they received their name from their manners, as Catharists (*Puritans*); and from the foreign country whence it was presumed they had been expelled, they were called ‘Bulgarians,’ or Bougres. In Italy they were commonly called Fratricelli, that is, ‘men of the brotherhood,’ because they cultivated brotherly love among themselves, acknowledging one another as brethren in Christ. Sometimes they were denominated ‘Paulicians,’ and, by corruption of the word ‘Publicans,’ considering them as sprung from that ancient sect, which, in the seventh century, spread over Armenia and Thrace, and which, when persecuted by the Greek emperor, might migrate into Europe and mingle with the Waldenses in Piedmont. Sometimes they were named from the country or city in which they prevailed, as Lombardists, Toulousians, and Albigenses. These branches, however, all sprang from one common stock, and were animated by the same religious and moral principles.”

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
p. 231.



In addition to all these local names, applied to the Waldenses, they were also called, especially in Italy, Paterines. Mr. Orchard says: “The name of Paterines was given to the Waldenses; and who, for the most part, held the same opinions, and have, therefore, been taken for one and the same class of people, who continued till the Reformation, under the name of Paterines or Waldenses.” And with reference to the various names applied to the Waldenses, the American Sunday-School Union, very justly remarks: “Though these eminent witnesses for the truth are now termed, generally, WALDENSES and ALBIGENSES, yet they were formerly known by a variety of names—some derived from their teachers, some from their manner of life, some from the places where they resided, some from the fate they suffered, and some from the malice of their enemies. The valleys of Piedmont, first gave them the name of Val-lenses, Waldenses, or Vaudois, a name which has since been employed to distinguish them as a primitive church. Those in the south of France were termed Albigenses, or poor men of Lyons, from their residence in or about Albi and Lyons. In like manner they were called Picards, Lombards, Bohemians, Bulgarians, etc., from the countries in which they dwelt. The epithets Cathari and Paterines were applied to them as terms of reproach; and that of Lollards, either from the same cause, or from a Waldensean pastor, Walter Lollard, who flourished about the middle of the thirteenth century.”

*Orch. Bapt. His.,*  
*vol. I, p. 259.*

*His. Waldenses,*  
*A. S. S. U., p. 18.*

It is not my purpose, in this work, to give a detailed account of all these families of Waldenses, in the various countries, but I only design to follow up the church succes-





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



2. *That Peter of Lyons received the name Waldus, or Waldo, from the Waldenses, on account of his union with them.*

3. *That the term Waldenses was derived from the residence in the valleys of the Alps, of the ancient martyrs of Jesus.*

It must be distinctly understood that the use of the name Waldenses, in this work, is designed to apply to the pure, ancient Waldenses, unless some qualification is used to indicate a different application.

---

## SECTION II.—THE CHARGE OF DRS. MILLER AND RICE AGAINST JONES, THE HISTORIAN.

“Blessed are ye when men shall revile you and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.”  
*Matt. 5: 11, 12.*

It was foretold by Christ and the apostles, that the faithful witnesses of Jesus should be accounted the filth and off-scouring of the world. Christ and the apostles were slandered and cruelly persecuted. The ancient Waldenses were misrepresented and persecuted by the *doctors* of the Catholic Church. And it need not be a matter of surprise that the Presbyterian D.D.'s, descendants of the Catholic Church, should misrepresent and slander a Baptist historian. As these learned dignitaries of Presbyterianism have assailed the character of William Jones, the Baptist historian, charging him with *fabrication* and *false-*



hood, it becomes us to pause and examine the grounds of these fearful accusations.

Dr. Miller, in his letter to Mr. Whary, which is published in the "Sketches of Church History," says: "That Mr. Jones has carefully withheld all the evidences of this fact (infant baptism) from his readers," and then charges Mr.

*S. B. Review,*  
1860, p. 111.

Jones with "forgery." And Dr. Rice makes his charge against Mr. Jones as follows: "I have another interest-

ing portion of history, which I will present for your consideration. Mr. Camp-

*Deb. with Camp-*  
*bell,* p. 404.

bell, and other Anti-pedobaptists, have

claimed the Waldenses and Albigenses (those witnesses for God and the truth, in the dark ages, when Christianity seemed almost lost from the earth) as Anti-pedobaptists. This claim is set up by Mr. Jones, the Baptist historian, of whose history Mr. Campbell has spoken in the highest terms; yet, in his account of the Waldenses, though quoting avowedly from Perrin's history, he left out everything that squinted at infant baptism!"

Dr. Rice bases this charge, upon the discrepancy in the accounts of Paul Perrin and William Jones, of the report of the commissioners to Louis XII., King of France, concerning the Waldenses. Mr. Rice took it for granted that Mr. Jones pretended to quote Perrin, and left out the clause which Perrin inserts concerning infant baptism. But, as will be seen, Mr. Jones does not profess to quote Perrin; he says, "quoted by Perrin." So, the question of veracity between Perrin and Jones must be settled by reference to the original document, the report to Louis. We will now proceed to introduce the conflicting accounts of Perrin and Jones, upon which



Miller and Rice rely to convict Jones of *falsehood*. Mr. Perrin says: “King Louis XII., of France, having received information from the enemies of the Waldenses, dwelling in Provence, of several heinous crimes which they fathered upon them, sent to the place Adam Fumee, Master of Requests, and a Sorbonist doctor, called Parni, who was his confessor, to make inquiry into the matter. They visited all their parishes and temples, and neither found there any images, or sign of the ornaments belonging to the mass or ceremonies of the Romish Church; much less could they discover any of those crimes with which they were charged. But rather that they kept the Sabbath duly, caused their children to be baptized according to the primitive church, taught them the articles of the Christian faith, and the commandments of God. The King having heard the report of the said commissioners, said, with an oath, that they were better men than himself or his people.”

Mr. Jones says: “Louis the XII., King of France, being informed by the enemies of the Waldenses inhabiting a part of the province of Provence, that several heinous crimes were laid to their account, sent the Master of Requests, and a certain doctor of Sorbonne, who was confessor to his majesty, to make inquiry into this matter. On their return, they reported that they had visited all the parishes where they dwelt, had inspected their places of worship, but that they had found no images, nor signs of the ornaments belonging to the mass, nor any of the ceremonies of the Romish Church; much less could they discover any traces of those crimes with which they were

*Per. His. Wald.  
and Albig., p. 36.*

*Jones' Ch. His.,  
p. 260.*





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



quoted from Perrin. He evidently looks beyond Perrin, and draws his authority from the same source. To impeach Jones, therefore, and to discredit him as a historian, appeal must be made to the original authority—the authority upon which he and Perrin both rely: to the Oration of Vesembecius. This, Mr. Rice did not do. He has, consequently, made his charge at random, and affirmed concerning that of which he knew nothing. Had he gone to the proper source for information, he would have found that Jones was right and Perrin wrong.”

That part of the oration of Vesembecius concerning which this controversy has arisen, is found in the celebrated discussion between Pope and Maguire, held in Dublin, Ireland, in the year 1827. Mr. Pope was an Episcopalian, and could have no partiality for the Baptist side of this controversy. In fact, this discussion occurred before this charge was made against Mr. Jones. It will be found by the examination of the Latin, from the report of the commissioners to King Louis, that Jones is correct, and the modern translations of Perrin wrong. It is my opinion that, if we could procure the original of Perrin’s history in the French language, we would find that there is no discrepancy between Perrin and Jones. It is possible that the error has crept into the modern translations of Perrin. Mr. Pope, in his debate with Maguire, a Romish priest, gives the circumstances of the commission to the Waldenses, with the report in Latin, and the translation,

*Pope & Maguire*  
*Dis.*, p. 196. as follows: “When some cardinals and prelates accused the Waldenses in Merindol and Cabriers of grievous crimes, and urged Lewis XII. to root them out, the Waldenses, having notice thereof, sent their deputies to his majesty to



declare their innocence. The prelates were instant upon the king not to give them any audience; but the king answered, that if he were to make war against the Turk, he would previously hear him. The king accordingly sent Adam Fumee, his Master of Requests, and Doctor Parni, his confessor, to search and inquire both into their life and religion. The commissioners visited those places, and upon their return reported to the king the result of their examination—viz: ‘That men were baptized; the articles of faith, and the ten commandments, were taught; the Lord’s day observed; the word of God preached; and no show of wickedness or fornication to be perceived among them; but that they found not any images in their churches, nor any ornaments belonging to the mass.’

The king, hearing this report of the commissioners, said (and bound it with an oath), ‘That they were better men than he or the rest of his Catholic subjects.’

‘Tum rex etiamsi, inquit, nihi in Turcam aut diabolum bellum suscipiendum esset eos tamen prius audire vellem.’—*Wesembecii Oratio de Valdens.*, p. 418, extat in *Joach. Camerarii Histor. Narrationes de Fratrum, Orthod. Eccl. in Bohemia.*

‘Illi ad regem referunt, illis in locis homines baptizari, articulos fidei et decalogum doceri, dominicos dies religiose coli, Dei verbum exponi, veneficia et stupra apud eos nulla. esse. His auditis rex, Jurejurando addito, me, inquit, et cetero populo meo Catholico meliores illa viri sunt.’—*Ibid.*, p. 419.

‘Ceterum se in ipsorum templis neque imagines neque ornamenta missæ ulla reperisse.’—*Ibid.*”

We consider the foregoing quotation of great importance. It contains the original of the report which must



settle the question of the veracity of Wm. Jones, the historian, who has gone to his reward. Perrin's history represents the commissioners as saying that the Waldenses "*Caused their children to be baptized according to the primitive church ;*" but Mr. Jones leaves out the *baptizing* of the children, for which he is branded as a *false* historian. But the report says, "*homines baptizari,*" "that *men* were baptized;" the word *infantes* is not in the report. As remarked by J. L. Waller: "The charge against Jones falls to the earth, and the blows at his reputation recoil" on the heads of his accusers. It turns out that Jones is the correct historian, and Perrin, or his translator, must be wrong. Pedobaptist writers are, certainly, hard pressed to prove Pedobaptism on the Waldenses. Mr. Jones did not conceal the history of the Waldenses; he freely admits, as will be seen hereafter, that the present Waldenses are Pedobaptists. It is a pity that such men as *Drs.* Miller and Rice will attempt to blast the character of a historian without an investigation of all the evidences on which they found their accusations. Have such men the moral courage to withdraw their charges? If such men as these will resort to such unworthy means to injure the character of Baptists, after they are sleeping in the tomb, what may be expected of the common herd of sectarians who are not acquainted with Baptist history? And why need we be surprised at the conduct of Catholics for tearing up the remains of the dead to be consigned to the flames, when learned men, who profess to be *reformed* Christians, are willing, without the slightest foundation, to tear from the tomb of the past the character of a Baptist historian and consign it to infamy? There will be a time when secret things will be brought to light.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



Rome, and at the same time received her ordinances and conformed, in part, to her superstitions. These were sometimes called Waldenses; but they were not the *witnessing* Waldenses. In regard to this controversy Mr. Orchard

says: "The earliest claims which Pedo-

*Orch. Bapt. His.*,

*vol. I*, p. 308;

see also, *Rob.*

*Eccl. Res.*, p. 488.

baptists can establish to any section of these dissidents, as a distinct body from

Rome, is from a document dated 1508.

This instrument is easily explained. Dur-

ing the ministry of Huss and Jerome, many persons were brought into their congregations who could not forego the Roman ceremonies. After Huss' death, a great many, found in Zisca's army (1433), were called Calixtines — *i. e.*, persons who wished the cup in the eucharist restored to the laity, but in every other respect were Catholics. Another part was made up of those persons who were zealous for reform in church and state; while a third part was called Waldenses, or Picards, who interfered not in political affairs."

Of these wavering Bohemian Hussites who separated from the Calixtines in 1457, Mr. Orchard says: "Such

was the unsettled state of the rest and re-

*Orch. His. Bapt.*,

*vol. I*, p. 309.

mainder of this body, that they published

nine creeds, or confessions of faith, or

rather one creed *amended and improved each* time. (Rob-

ins. Res., p. 312.) The fourth, with the fifth edition im-

proved, was presented, it is said, in 1508, to King Ula-

dislaus, while he was in Hungary. The confession pre-

sented to the king, says, in the preface, that *the petitioning*

*party were not Waldenses*, though they were persecuted

under that name." From this testimony we discover that

the first dated document, or confession of faith, among the



Waldenses in support of infant baptism, was published in 1508 by the Calixtine Hussites, who were not the descendants of the original Waldenses, and by their own confession were not Waldenses at all. And yet Pedobaptist historians gravely quote this confession in proof of the Pedobaptist character of the ancient Waldenses.

But the document mainly relied on by the champions of infant baptism to prove the charge of infant baptism on the ancient Waldenses, is the "SPIRITUAL ALMANAC"!! This rare document was found among Moreland's Waldensean manuscripts, gathered about the year 1655, and its date and authorship is entirely unknown; but it is supposed to have been written by George Moril, about the year 1530. But some Pedobaptists claim the Spiritual Almanac as a very ancient and pure Waldensean document. It is relied on by Perrin and Wall to refute the standing charge of the Catholics, that the Waldenses rejected infant baptism. This charge of the Catholic writers, that the Waldenses "rejected the baptism of infants," Paul Perrin calls a "*calumny*." He remarks: "The fourth calumny was concerning baptism, which it is said they denied to infants. From this imputation they quit themselves as follows: 'Neither is the time or place appointed for those who must be baptized; but charity, and the edification of the church and congregation, ought to be the rule in this matter; yet, notwithstanding, we bring our children to be baptized,—which they ought to do to whom they are nearest related—as are their parents, or those whom God hath inspired with such a charity.'"

Any one who is partially acquainted with the history of the Waldenses, must be convinced, at once, that this Spiritual Almanac, as quoted by Perrin, is not a genuine an-

*His. Wald.*, p. 28.



cient Waldensean document. It bears upon its face its own condemnation. It should be remembered that the ancient Waldenses held with death-like tenacity to the word of God alone as the rule of action in matters of religion; but these Waldenses, of Spiritual-Almanac notoriety, appeal to *charity* and the *edification* of the *church and congregation* as “the rule in this matter” of baptizing infants! Does any one suppose for a moment that the ancient witnesses of God, the Waldenses, would deviate from God’s word and make a pseudo charity the rule of action? No. This Almanac did not come from the ancient Waldenses. But the apology of Paul Perrin for the Catholic charge against the Waldenses for rejecting infant baptism, only makes *bad, worse*; and places the Waldenses in a very unenviable position, indeed. And if he is correct, it would be hard enough even for the modern Pedobaptists to claim affinity with the Waldenses at all. He says: “True it is, that, being for some hun-

*Perrins’ His.  
Wald., p. 28.*

dreds of years constrained to suffer their children to be baptized by the Romish priests, they deferred the doing of it as

long as possible, because they detested the human inventions annexed to the institution of that Holy Sacrament, which they looked upon as pollutions of it. Their pastors, whom they called barbes, being often in travels abroad, for the service of their churches, they could not have baptism administered to their children by their own ministry. They, therefore, sometimes kept them long without baptism, upon which delay the priests charged them with that reproach. To which, not only their adversaries have given credit, but many of those also who have approved of their lives and faith in all other points.”





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



their state in 1530, when the churches *connected with George Moril* to save themselves from Catholic rage, did go to mass in Provence, and pleaded it was no great harm, provided their hearts were kept right with God. For which prevarication and hypocrisy the reformer Oecolampadius rebukes them, and condemns the practice.” “Such were not witnesses of the truth.”

Even the learned Dr. Wall, after all of his efforts to find infant baptism among the ancient  
*See Wall's His.,* Waldenses, admits that in their older con-  
 p. 597. fessions the Waldenses say nothing about infant baptism.

The reader is now pretty well prepared to discriminate between the ancient and modern Waldenses. But to remove all doubt upon this subject, we now introduce other witnesses on this important question.

Mr. Robinson, the historian, says: “They (ancient Waldenses) are also distinguished from  
*Rob.'s Eccl. Res.* the latter Vaudois, and the reformed  
 p. 461. churches, by not using any liturgy; by not compelling faith; by condemning parochial churches; by not taking oaths; by allowing every person, even women, to teach; by not practicing infant baptism; by not admitting godfathers; by rejecting all sacerdotal habits; by denying all ecclesiastical orders of priesthood, Papal and Episcopal; by not bearing arms, and by their abhorrence of every species of persecution.”

How wide the ecclesiastical gulf between the ancient Waldenses—who patiently suffered the loss of all things, even to life itself, rather than shed the blood of others—and these modern Pedobaptist Waldenses, who established themselves by cruel war and bloody revenge!



In describing the modern Waldenses in their struggles to establish themselves in the valleys, the American Sunday School Union testifies as follows: "And what is still more lamentable, the Vaudois, having no means of providing for the security of the prisoners, were compelled, for their own safety, to put to the sword every man that fell into their hands."

*His. Wald., A. S. S. U., p. 129.*

No one who is not prompted by sectarian motives, will associate these warlike Waldenses with the ancient suffering witnesses for Christ, called Waldenses.

It is also a well known fact in history, that the ancient Waldenses firmly resisted every form of State religion. But these Pedobaptist Waldenses were incorporated into national churches, and their ministers finally were enrolled among the State clergy of the empire.

*See Orch., vol. I, p. 316; also, A. S. S. U., p. 144.*

It was about the year 1532 that the Pedobaptist Waldenses, in connection with George Moril and Peter Masson, united with the Reformers under Luther and Calvin. And this class of Waldenses were classed by the Catholics with the Lutherans. This union with the Reformers was effected through the instrumentality of Oecolampadius.

Concerning the distinction between the ancient and modern Waldenses, Mr. Benedict remarks: "For a number of the first centuries their discipline partook of the freedom and simplicity of the Baptists, and was more free as to the teaching of females, and the brotherhood generally, than many of our churches would now admit. By degrees they were moulded into Presbyterian measures, and in

*Ben. His. Bapt., p. 77.*



the end, that portion of them which still survived in the ancient valleys, adopted in substance the Episcopal form of church government.”

The author of the Encyclopedia of Religious Knowledge remarks that: “It is necessary here that we distinguish between the ancient and modern Waldenses. It appears, from all the accounts we gather of them before the Reformation, that their principles and practice were more pure and Scriptural than since that period.”

*Religious Encyc.*,  
p. 1149.

Mr. Jones, as the special historian of the Waldenses, is still more explicit on this point. In the preface to his fifth London edition, Mr. Jones says, in reply to the complaint of Mr. Gilly, who found fault with Jones because he carried the history of the Waldenses no further than the year 1686: “This is certainly true; but my defense

*Jones' Fifth Edition*, p. 9.

is an easy one—my *narrative stops where the story ends*. I profess to give the history of the churches of Piedmont and other places, commonly designated Waldenses and Albigenses, not of individuals; and as I consider those churches to have been utterly dispersed and scattered by a series of persecutions which terminated in the year 1686, I consider myself to have brought the subject to its legitimate close. If we give credit to a host of writers belonging to the Church of England, the two witnesses of the Apocalypse (Rev. xi: 3, 4, etc.) were the two churches, or, to speak more properly, the two classes of churches, which passed under the names of the Waldenses and Albigenses.

\* \* \* \* Now, these two witnesses, after prophesying twelve hundred and sixty years in sackcloth, according to the prophetic testimony, were to be finally overcome and





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



Jesus Christ. And by this ordinance we are received into the holy congregation of God's people, *previously professing our faith and change of life.*'

And, with regard to baptism of infants, they insist upon it to be one of the leading features of Antichrist. Their words are: 'He teaches to baptize children into the faith, and attributes to this the work of regeneration; thus confounding the work of the Holy Spirit, in regeneration, with the external rite of baptism, and on this foundation bestows orders, and indeed grounds all his Christianity.' "

*Jones' Fifth Edition, p. 11.*

And, on the same page, Mr. Jones concludes thus: "Enough has surely been said to show that the present race of Protestant churches in Piedmont bear little or no

affinity to the ancient Waldenses, either in their doctrinal sentiments, their discipline and external order, or their religious practices; and it is an act of justice to the memory of these excellent people to rescue them from this unnatural alliance." And after thus showing that the *ancient* and *modern* Waldenses were totally different in their denominational character, Mr. Jones says of the

*Jones' Fifth Edition, p. 12.*

*former* that: "They brought up their children in the nurture and admonition of the Lord; but they neither sprinkled nor im-

mersed them, under the notion of administering Christian baptism; they were, in a word, so many distinct churches of ANTI-PEDOBAPTISTS."

Enough testimony has now been introduced to satisfy every unprejudiced mind that the modern Waldenses are totally distinct, in their faith and practice, from the ancient Waldenses, who were driven from the valleys of Piedmont in 1686, by the relentless cruelty of the army of



Louis XIV. So, when the Baptists claim the Waldenses as their ancestors, they do not refer to the present inhabitants of the *valleys*, but to the original Waldenses, who dwelt in the *valleys* before the time of Luther's Reformation. The present inhabitants of these valleys, called Waldenses, are not Baptists. They are a different race of Waldenses from the original witnesses who dwelt in the valleys before the Reformation. Many modern Pedobaptists, like the Pharisees in the time of Christ, build the tomb of the Waldenses, though their own fathers killed them. And while they praise to the skies these noble martyrs, they persecute to the extent of their power those who now advocate the same doctrine for which the Waldenses suffered, bled, and died. But, in order to stop the mouth of every gainsayer, we here present a few other witnesses in vindication of the Waldenses from the charge of Pedobaptism. Mr. Benedict says: "I have said that, from very early times, up to the fifteenth century, the Baptist, or, at least, the Antipedobaptist character of a multitude of that great community which passed under the general name of Waldenses and Albigenses, is very strongly developed; it is indicated by the canons, decrees, and anathemas of so many councils; by the statutes of so many states and governments; and the impeachments and complaints of so many old writers on the Pedobaptist side, that a man of but a moderate share of ecclesiastical knowledge must make a judy of himself to deny it, or prove himself an unfair historian if he attempts to conceal it." Again, Dr. Wall, the learned Episcopalian, admits that: "The Popish writers of that time, who wrote against them [the Waldenses], some of which do plainly and

*Ben. His.*, p. 78.

*Hist. Inf. Bapt.*, p. 596.



fully charge some of them with denying it"—*infant baptism*. It is a conceded fact, by all candid historians, that the Roman Catholics not only accused the Waldenses of neglecting infant baptism, but they waged constant persecution against them, in order to force them to baptize their infants. This would not have been the case had the Waldenses been Pedobaptists. In regard to this persecution against the Waldenses, to force them to baptize

children, Mr. Jones says: "On the 31st of January, 1686, they were amazed at the publication of an order from the Duke of Savoy, forbidding his subjects the exercise of the Protestant religion upon pain of death; the confiscation of their goods; the demolition of their churches; and the banishment of their pastors. All infants born from that time were to be baptized and brought up in the Roman Catholic religion, under the penalty of their fathers being condemned to the galleys." We here insert the language of Victor Amadeus, the Duke of Savoy, in his cruel edict against the Waldenses. These are his own words: "And

concerning the children that shall be born by father and mother of the said pretended Reformed religion, our intention is that, after the publishing this present edict, they shall be baptized by the priests of the parish that are already, or that shall be, established for the future in the said valleys: to this purpose we command their fathers and mothers to send or bring them to the churches, under pain of being sent five years to the galleys for their fathers, and whipping for their mothers; and, moreover, the said children shall be brought up in the said Catholic, Apostolic, and Roman religion. And we command expressly

Jones' *Ch. His.*, p. 400.

Jones' *Ch. His.*, p. 418.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



Allix, Collier, Wall, Perrin, Leger, Moreland, Mosheim, Maclean, Gilly, Sims, and others—all of the Pedobaptist persuasion, with every advantage of learning on their side, who collated councils, canons, synods, conferences, chronicles, decrees, bulls, sermons, homilies, confessions, creeds, liturgies, etc., from the private creed of Irenæus down to the rules of Augsburg; who examined documents at home, and explored territories abroad,—their *united labors* could never produce a single dated document or testimony of Pedobaptism among the Vaudois, separate from the Romish community, from Novatian's rupture to the death of the execrable monster, Alexander VI., 1503."

It is said that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word shall be established; *and from the testimony of friends and foes, Baptists, Protestants and Catholics, we have proved that the ancient Waldenses were Anti-pedobaptists.* With such mountains of testimony rising up before us, it is useless to introduce other witnesses on this point; for he that will not be convinced by the testimony already adduced, *that the original Waldenses did not baptize infants*, need not be argued with; for such are given over to prejudice and blindness of heart. In ascending the stream of history we have discovered that the ancient Waldenses are the real ancestors of the Baptist denomination of the present day. But we will, for the accommodation of those who are weak in the faith, introduce other witnesses on this point.

All, who possess even a moderate share of historic knowledge, must admit that *every Pedobaptist confession of faith, ancient or modern, teaches, directly and positively, the doctrine of infant baptism.*



We now proceed to examine the ancient Waldensean confessions on this subject.

*First:* We refer the reader to an ancient Waldensean confession, as given by Jones the historian, and also found in Perrin and others. In this confession, article twelfth, the ancient Waldenses say: "We consider the sacraments as signs of <sup>o</sup> things, or as the visible emblems of <sup>h</sup>ly invisible blessings. We regard it as proper and even necessary that believers use these symbols or visible forms when it can be done. Notwithstanding which, we maintain that believers may be saved without these signs, when they have neither place nor opportunity to observe them."

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
p. 249; see also,  
*Perrin*, chap. 12.

This ancient Waldensean confession contains not even the slightest intimation of infant baptism. It refers alone to the baptism of *believers*. It is, therefore, an Anti-pedobaptist confession. This confession is admitted by all to be an ancient document, written about the year *eleven hundred and twenty*.

*Second:* Mr. Jones gives another ancient Waldensean confession of the twelfth century; and while it speaks of baptism and the Lord's Supper, it has not one word about *infant baptism*.

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
p. 249.

*Third:* In another ancient confession of the Waldenses, we have the *seventh article*, as follows: "We believe that in the ordinance of baptism the water is the visible and external sign which represents to us that which, by virtue of God's invisible operation, is within us; namely, the renovation of our minds and the mortification of our members, through Jesus Christ. And by

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
p. 251; see also,  
*Perrin*, chap. 12.



this ordinance we are received into the holy congregation of God's people, previously professing and declaring our faith and change of life."

Is this a Pedobaptist confession? These Waldenses emphatically state, that *by this ordinance (baptism) we are received into the holy congregation of God's people, PREVIOUSLY PROFESSING AND DECLARING OUR FAITH AND CHANGE OF LIFE.*

Can little infants profess *faith* and a *change of life* before baptism? Will Drs. Miller and Rice claim this as a Pedobaptist confession of faith? It would be quite as easy to find infant baptism in the Bible as in this confession.

It should be remembered that Dr. Wall, the champion of infant baptism, admits that the ancient Waldensean confessions say nothing of infant baptism.

It is worthy of remark, that in the catechism of the ancient Waldenses for the instruction of youth, nothing is said of infant baptism, though the church and its ordinances are referred to. Who ever heard of a Pedobaptist catechism which leaves out infant baptism? There is no such catechism in existence.

Another ancient Waldensean document is called the "Noble Lesson." It was written in the original Waldensean language, and dated in the year 1100. This document is appealed to by all historians as an authentic Waldensean production. It exhibits the purity of the doctrine of the Waldenses in contrast with the corruptions of Rome. Infant baptism can not be found in the Noble Lessons. In regard to the ministry of the apostles, the Noble Lessons says: "And they [the apostles] proclaimed without fear the doctrine of Christ, preaching





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



## SECTION IV.—ORIGIN OF THE WALDENSES.

In tracing the stream of Baptist history to its fountain-head we have, with Mosheim, followed it into the remote depths of antiquity, and found the ancient Waldenses, environed with the snow-clad Alps, contending for the same faith and practice, and suffering for the same principles now advocated by Baptists. We have now reached an age of the world centuries before the modern sects had a being on the earth. Episcopalianism, Lutheranism, Calvinism, Methodism, and Campbellism, with every other ism of modern date, were unknown to these early ages of trial; and while the gloomy darkness of Romanism overshadowed our sin-smitten world, these ancient Waldenses were the unwavering witnesses for the truth of Christ, and stood as the light of the world through this long and gloomy period of moral darkness. But where did these Waldenses originate? We have already seen that they did not commence with Peter Waldus, but, long before the time of Peter's separation from Rome, we find them battling for the same glorious truths of the Gospel of Christ for which they suffered in after times. Peter, instead of originating the Waldenses, joined them and received his name Waldus, or Waldensis, from them. It has already been observed that the term Albigenses is only another name for the same class of persons called Waldenses. While the Waldenses inhabited the valleys of Piedmont, the Albigenses dwelt in the southern provinces of France. But where did they originate? Shall we ask the bleeding Waldenses themselves from whence they came? In their petition to the Duke of Savoy for liberty to worship God without molestation, "They implored



his highness to consider that their religious profession was not a thing of yesterday, as their adversaries falsely reported; but had been the profession of their fathers, grandfathers, and great-grandfathers; yea, of their predecessors of still more ancient times, even of the martyrs, confessors, apostles, and prophets; and they called upon their adversaries to prove the contrary, if they were able.” These persecuted martyrs of Christ claimed that their profession was handed down to them from apostolic times. And, as all denominations are allowed to give their own history, which ought to be taken as correct, unless it conflicts with known facts, why not respect the statements of these witnesses of Jesus? But this claim of the Waldenses does not conflict with any known facts; therefore, their testimony is valid, and must not be despised. Men who suffered, as did the ancient Waldenses, for the truth, would not knowingly utter falsehood in regard to their own history. But if they did not descend from the apostolic age, they knew it, and are, therefore, liable to the charge of *falsehood*. This can not be; then this statement of the Waldenses is true. In regard to the rise of the Waldenses, the celebrated Theodore Beza, the successor of Calvin, says: “As for the Waldenses, I may be permitted to call them the very seed of the primitive and purer Christian Church, since they are those that have been upheld, as is abundantly manifest, by the wonderful providence of God, so that neither those endless storms and tempests by which the whole Christian world has been shaken for so many succeeding ages, and the western parts at length, so miserably oppressed by the Bishop of Rome falsely so called,

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
p. 354.

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
p. 263.



nor those horrible persecutions which have been expressly raised against them, were ever able so far to prevail as to make them bend, or yield a voluntary subjection to the Roman tyranny and idolatry.”

“On another occasion the same writer remarks, that  
*Jones’ Ch. His.,* ‘the Waldenses, time out of mind, have  
 p. 264.      opposed the abuses of the Church of Rome,  
 and have been persecuted after such a  
 manner, not by the sword of the word of God, but by  
 every species of cruelty, added to a million of calumnies  
 and false accusations, that they have been compelled to  
 disperse themselves wherever they could, wandering  
 through the deserts like wild beasts. The Lord, never-  
 theless, has so preserved the residue of them, that, not-  
 withstanding the rage of the whole world, they still in-  
 habit three countries, at a great distance from each other,  
 viz: Calabria, Bohemia, and Piedmont, and the countries  
 adjoining, where they dispersed themselves from the quar-  
 ters of Provence about two hundred and seventy years  
 ago. And as to their religion, they never adhered to Pa-  
 pal superstition, for which reason they have been contin-  
 ually harrassed, by the bishops and inquisitors abusing the  
 arm of secular justice, so that their continuance to the  
 present time is evidently miraculous.’ ”

Yes; these Waldensean Baptists were the *seed of the primitive church*, and *upheld by the wonderful providence of God*, so that those endless storms and tempests which shook the whole Christian world for ages failed to shake the courageous Waldenses. And all the fearful persecutions, attended by every engine of fiendish cruelty, and with a million of false accusations, failed to make these ancient Baptists bow to the Romish Beast. They wandered





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



uation of the Waldenses, report as follows: “The inhabitants of the valleys did not hold, by the  
*Jones’ Ch. His.,* concessions of their Princes, the liberty to  
 p. 402. exercise in public their religion; because it was established in this country above eight centuries ago; and that they enjoyed this right long before they were the subjects of his royal highness’ ancestors, inso-much that, having never been of the same religion as their Prince, it could not be said that they had abandoned it, nor he oblige them to return to it.”

This carries the history of the Waldenses in the valleys back to a period long before the time of Peter Waldo; and it further shows that they were never of the *same religion as the Catholics*.

In regard to the origin of the Waldenses, Orchard says: “The orthodoxy of the Novatian party, with the influence of some of their ministers, is supposed to have procured some mitigation of the law. Constantine’s oppressive measures prompted many to leave the scene of sufferings, and retire into more sequestered spots. Claudius Seyssel, the popish archbishop, *traces* the rise of the Waldensean heresy to a pastor named *Leo*, leaving Rome at this period for the valleys.” The Novatians were persecuted by Constantine, the first to unite church and state; and numbers of these persecuted Novatians left Italy for the valleys of Piedmont at different times from about the year 325 to 425; and these wandering Novatians were in after times called Waldenses. It then appears that the Waldenses sprang from the Novatians who fled from Italy in the fourth century. Again, Mr. Orchard says, upon this subject, that: “*Eckbertus* and *Emericus*, two avowedly and bitter ene-

*Orch. Bapt. His.,*  
 pp. 57, 58.



mies of the Waldenses, do assert, that the new Puritans (Waldenses) do conform to the doctrines and manner of the old Puritans (*i. e.*, the Novatians).” This shows, by the acknowledgment of Pedobaptists themselves, that the Waldenses descended from the Novatians. And Orchard fixes the time of the general dispersion or flight of the Novatians at the year 413. These early Waldenses were frequently called Patērines, but we prefer using the term Waldenses, to avoid the confusion arising from the use of so many names. Again, Mr. Orchard says, speaking of the persecutions against the Waldenses by the emperors Theodosius and Honorius, that: “The edict was probably obtained by the influence of Augustine, who could endure no rival, nor would he bear with any who questioned the virtue of his rites, or the sanctity of his brethren, or the soundness of the Catholic creed; and these points being disputed by the Novatianists and Donatists, two powerful and extensive bodies of dissidents in Italy and Africa, they were consequently made to feel the weight of his influence. These combined modes of oppression led the faithful to abandon the cities and seek retreats in the country, which they did, particularly in the valleys of Piedmont, the inhabitants of which began to be called Waldenses.” The laws of the fourth Lateran council, with the edicts of the emperors of the East and West, were leveled against the Novatians and Donatists, condemning all the *re-baptized* and the *re-baptizers* to suffer death. This caused many of them to flee into the wilderness, to the *valleys* prepared for their reception; where they soon acquired the name of the Waldenses. Thus we have the connection clearly made out between

*Orch. Bapt. His.,*  
*vol I, p. 258.*

*Orch. Bapt. His.,*  
*p. 61.*



the ancient Waldenses and the Novatians. We will now introduce the testimony of the learned editor of the Encyclopedia of Religious knowledge. He remarks that:

*Religious Encyc.*,  
p. 1147. “It seems to be a serious mistake, into which some popular writers have fallen,

who represent the Waldenses as originating in France about the year 1170, and deriving their name from the celebrated Peter Waldo. The evidence is now ample, that so far from being a new sect at that period, they had existed under various names, as a distinct class of dissenters from the established churches of Greece and Rome in the earliest ages. It is an egregious error to suppose that when Christianity was taken into alliance with the state, by the Emperor Constantine, in the beginning of the fourth century, all the orthodox churches were so ignorant of the genius of their religion as to consent to the corruption of a worldly establishment.” This author traces the Waldenses back through the Novatians to the apostolic age, or “earliest ages.” This takes our history back prior to the time of the adulterous union of church and state by Constantine; and shows clearly that the Waldenses were in existence under various names up to the times of the apostles.

Crantz, in his history, dates the origin of the Waldenses in the beginning of the fourth century, at which time some of the Novatians settled in the *valleys*. Again, it is said by Mr. Brown, the editor of the Encyclopedia, that: “The

*Religious Encyc.*,  
p. 1147. Cathari, or Puritan churches of the Novatians, also had at that very period,

(about A. D. 325) been flourishing as a distinct communion for more than seventy years all over the empire; maintaining, by the acknowledgment even of





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



years or more, the Bishop of Rome attempted to subjugate the Church of Milan under his jurisdiction; and at last the interest of Rome grew too potent for the Church of Milan, planted by one of the disciples; insomuch that the bishop and people, rather than own their jurisdiction, retired to the valleys of Lucerne and Angrogna, and thence were called *Vallences*, *Wallenses*, or *the people of the valleys.*” Thus, as it was in the planting of the early churches in America, so with those of the valleys of Piedmont—a whole church emigrated together, bearing those eternal principles which lighted up the Alpine valleys for twelve hundred and sixty years. Edwards contends that the Waldenses were the true Church which fled into the wilderness from the face of the Apocalyptical Dragon, as described in the twelfth chapter of Revelations. We have the most overwhelming proof that the ancient Waldenses descended from the Novatian churches which bore testimony against the corruptions of the so-called Catholic party in the third, fourth, and fifth centuries.

It has been erroneously supposed that Claudius of Turin was the founder of the Waldensean churches. On this point, the “American Sunday School Union” remarks:

*His. Wald., A. S.*  
*S. U., p. 15.* “Although we have stated, in the former chapter, that Claudius of Turin has been

styled the founder of the Waldensean churches, their origin is to be traced to a period still more remote. Leger begins his history of the Churches of the Vaudois by a declaration that, ‘they never required any reformation.’ For the first four or five centuries, the whole of what is termed the diocese of the north of Italy, of which the Waldenses formed a part, remained comparatively pure.” Yes; it is a historic fact that the an-



cient Waldenses were not *reformers*, in the modern acceptation of that term. We all need to reform and amend our lives, as individuals; but Jesus Christ did not establish his Church on such a sandy foundation as to need the aid of human wisdom to reform it. The Waldenses, instead of claiming to be a reformation from Popery, claim to be the bride of Christ, which fled into the wilderness from the face of the dragon. Mr. Robinson, the historian, says: "Let it not seem romantic if we suppose that [the] Waldenses, who, we know, studied the Revelation of John, thought themselves directed to retire by God himself to sequestered places; for, by the New Testament prophet, he had said: 'The woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and three-score days.'"

*Rob.'s Eccl. Res.,  
p. 510.*

If the Waldenses had sprung either from Waldo or the Catholics, they must have known it. But they boldly claim to be more ancient than the Catholics—the descendants of the apostolic churches. And this is claimed for them by Monastier, the historian. He claims that: "The VAUDOIS CHURCH is a link that unites them [the evangelical churches] to the primitive church. By means of it, they establish the anterior existence of their constitution, doctrine, and worship, to that of the papistical idolatries and errors."

*Monastier's His.  
Vaud. Ch., p. 5.*

Dr. Alexis Muston bears testimony, as follows: "THE VAUDOIS (Waldenses) of the Alps are, in our view, primitive Christians, or inheritors of the primitive church, who have been preserved in these valleys from the alterations successively

*The Israel of the  
Alps, p. 1.*



introduced by the Church of Rome into the evangelical worship. It is not they who separated from Catholicism; but Catholicism which separated from them, in modifying the primitive worship.”

And Mr. Jones says that: “Reinerius Saccho, an in-  
*Jones’ Ch. His.,* quisitor, and one of their most implacable  
 p. 232. enemies, who lived only eighty years after

Waldo, admits that the Waldenses flourished five hundred years before that preacher.”

It is customary for modern writers to call the Waldenses Protestants, which is a misnomer. The term *Protestants* was applied to the *reformers* of the sixteenth century, who protested against the corruptions of Rome, and forsook her communion. It is, therefore, wrong to give the name *Protestants* to those who were never connected in any way with the Catholic Church. On this

*Jones’ Ch. His.,* subject, Dr. Symmons remarks: “I call  
 p. 375, *note.* them, as they are called in these official  
 dispatches, by the generally-known name

of Protestants; but the dissenters from the Papal Church, who occupied the valleys of Piedmont, had neither connection nor a common origin with those who were properly called Protestants from one of the first acts of their association in Germany. The Waldenses asserted a much more ancient pedigree, and assumed to be of the old Roman Church before it was corrupted by the papal innovations.”

Again: the apostolic origin of the Waldenses is distinctly stated, as maintained by themselves, by Comenius, who published the Discipline of the Churches of Bohemia in 1644. In the year 1457, a company of the Bohemian Hussites separated themselves from the Calix-





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



did not think fit to take upon them the name of bishops, because of the anti-christian abuse of that name, contenting themselves with the name of *elders*.”

Thus we see that the ancient Waldenses claimed a **LAWFUL AND UNINTERRUPTED SUCCESSION FROM THE APOSTLES THEMSELVES**. How contemptible the sectarian hate that would originate the Waldenses with Rome! and thereby accuse them of falsehood in claiming an apostolic origin.

In answer to the charge of some, that they originated with Peter Waldo, Dr. Allix remarks: “Wherefore that

*Allix's Chs. of Piedmont, p. 192.* I may, once for all, clear this matter, I say, first, that it is absolutely false, that these churches were ever founded by Pe-

ter Waldo. Let them show us any author of that time who asserts that Peter Waldo ever preached in the diocese of Italy, or that he founded any church there. Let them produce any sure tradition of that people referring the original of their churches to Peter Waldo. Those who wrote at that time do not tell us anything like this, no more than they who lived after. Wherefore we must needs conclude it a pure forgery to look upon Waldo as the person who first brought the Reformation into Italy we now find there. I own, indeed, that Peter Waldo's taking care to have the Holy Scriptures translated into the vulgar tongue, the churches of Italy reaped much benefit from that version, whereof we have to this day some old copies in the library of the University of Cambridge. But this does not, in the least, infer that Waldo ought to be considered as the founder of them. I say, further, that by the acknowledgment of the enemies themselves of the Waldenses, it is absolutely false that these churches are of



no older standing than Peter Waldo. For this we have the confession of Reinerius, an inquisitor, who lived before the middle of the thirteenth century. He ingenuously acknowledgeth ‘that the heresy he calls Vaudois, or poor people of Lyons, was of great antiquity. Among all sects,’ sayeth he (chap. 4), ‘that either are, or have been, there is none more dangerous to the Church than that of the Leonists, and that for three reasons: The first is, because it is the sect that is of the longest standing of any; for some say it hath been continued down ever since the time of Pope Sylvester, and others, ever since that of the apostles. The second is, because it is the most general of all sects; for scarcely is there any country to be found where this sect hath not spread itself.’ ”

Once more, the Waldensean claim to apostolic origin is found in the preface of their translation of the Bible, as given by D’Anvers, as follows: “In the preface to the French Bible, and the first that ever was printed, they say that they have always had the full enjoyment of that heavenly truth contained in the Holy Scriptures, ever since they were enriched with the same by the apostles themselves, having, in fair manuscripts, preserved the entire Bible in their native tongue, from generation to generation.—*Morl. Hist.*, p. 14.”

*D’Anvers on Baptism*, p. 341.

In this Waldensean record we have two very important historic facts stated: first, that the Waldenses claimed a regular succession from the apostles; and second, that they preserved the entire Bible, in manuscripts, all the time from the apostolic age. What now becomes of the presumptuous claim of Romanists, that if it had not been for them the Bible would have been lost?



Starting in America, in the year 1870, we have followed the chain of Baptist history back through the persecutions endured by them in Virginia and Massachusetts, to the planting of the American colonies; and from the shores of America we have traced the same chain unbroken, across the waves of the mighty Atlantic, to England and Wales, where our fathers bore noble testimony to Baptist principles under the bloody reigns of the British monarchs who swayed the scepters of both church and state; and from thence we have followed the same chain of succession to Holland, where Richard Blunt received baptism from the pastor of a church whose descent was from the ancient Waldenses; and still following up this succession, from the Netherlands back into Germany, beyond the dawn of the Reformation of the sixteenth century, where the ancient Waldensean Baptists were found all alone battling, with Spartan valor, against the over-mastering tide of Popish usurpations; and, still ascending the same historic stream, we reach the poetic valleys of Piedmont, where the altar-fires of our holy religion burned with undimmed luster during the dreary period of twelve hundred and sixty prophetic days.

Surrounded by these mountain bulwarks, these faithful witnesses of Jesus raised their songs of high-sounding praises to their Redeemer, and preached in rustic strains that same glad-tiding which was announced by the angels to the affrighted shepherds of Bethlehem's plains. And from these soul-enrapturing scenes in the Alpine valleys, we have still ascended within the very shadow of the apostolic age, back to the classic ground of Roman eloquence where the Novatians raised the standard of protest and bore aloft the banner of Jesus Christ against the





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



## CHAPTER VII.

## THE NOVATIANS.

1. THE CHURCHES CALLED "NOVATIAN CHURCHES" DID NOT ORIGINATE WITH NOVATIAN.

2 THE ORIGIN OF THE NOVATIANS.

SECTION I.—THE CHURCHES CALLED "NOVATIAN CHURCHES" DID NOT ORIGINATE WITH NOVATIAN.

"Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition."

2 *Thess.* 2: 3.

The mystery of iniquity had begun his work of death even in the time of Paul's ministry. Corruptions were introduced into the early churches at a very early period. This was in fulfillment of predictions of Christ and the apostles, that false prophets should arise and deceive many, and, if possible, deceive the very elect. And that grievous wolves will appear among the flock, or Church of Christ, and that even church members would arise speaking perverse things to draw disciples after them. Historians and theologians have been accustomed to appeal to the practice of the Christians of the second and third centuries, as of almost equal authority with the word of God itself. This is the fatal mistake which has aided to inundate the world with Catholic superstitions. Concerning the records of the ancient church, the learned Isaac Taylor says: "If at any time, or if in any particular instance, the



authority of the ancient church is to be urged upon the modern church, then surely there is a pertinence in turning to the apostolic prophesies of perversions, corruptions, apostacies, quickly to spring within the sacred inclosure itself, which meet us at the threshold, and seem to bring us under a most solemn obligation to look to it, lest, amid the fervors of an indiscriminate reverence, we seize for imitation the very things which the apostles foresaw and forewarned the church of as fatal errors." This timely warning of this eminent author points out to us the danger of embracing errors because of their antiquity. While the flood of corruptions was pouring upon the ancient churches, and many were being overwhelmed by it, God had faithful witnesses all the time to withstand this tide of error, and contend earnestly for the faith delivered to the saints. And prominently among these witnesses the Novatians appear, bearing their unflinching testimony for Christ. As to Novatian himself, he is so fearfully misrepresented by his enemies that it is somewhat difficult to give a correct account of him. He was a presbyter, or elder, in the church at Rome before the rise of the Roman Catholic Church. Cornelius, the rival and implacable enemy of Novatian, was elected bishop, or pastor, of the church at Rome in the year two hundred and fifty-one. He represents Novatian as having been "baptized in his sick bed, by aspersion." However this may be, it does not affect the standing of the Novatian churches, for it will be seen that the Novatians did not receive their origin or baptism from Novatian. All candid historians admit that Novatian was grossly misrepresented by Cornelius. Novatian was a man eminent for stern piety, learning and

*Taylor's Ancient  
Chris., p. 47.*



eloquence. Dupin, the Catholic historian, says of him :

*Dup., vol. IV, p. 1.* “This author has abundance of wit, knowl-  
edge and eloquence ; his style is pure, clean,

and polite ; his expressions choice, his thoughts natural, and his way of reasoning just : he is full of citations of texts of Scripture that are always to the purpose : and besides, there is a great deal of order and method in those treatises of his we now have ; and he never speaks but with a world of candor and moderation.” Robinson, the

historian, says : “The history of Novatian is long, and,

*Eccl. Res., p. 126.* like that of all others in his condition,  
beclouded with fables and slander. The

character of the man ought no more to be taken from Cyprian than his ought from the Pagans, who, by punning on his name, called him Coprian, or the Scavenger.

The case, in brief, was this : Novatian was an elder in the church at Rome. He was a man of extensive learning, and held the same doctrine as the church did, and published several treatises in defense of what he believed. His address was eloquent and insinuating, and his morals were irreproachable. He saw, with extreme pain, the intolerable depravity of the church. Christians, within the space of a very few years, were caressed by one emperor, and persecuted by another. In seasons of prosperity, many rushed into the church for base purposes. In times of adversity they denied the faith and ran back to idolatry again. When the squall was over, away they came again to the church, with all their vices, to deprave others by their example. The bishops, fond of proselytes, encouraged all this, and transferred the attention of Christians from the old confederacy for virtue, to vain shows at Easter, and a thousand other Jewish ceremonies, adulter-





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



*the empire Puritan churches were constituted."* So we discover that Novatian had nothing more to do with the organization of the Novatian churches throughout the empire than the force of example. And, as in all such cases, no doubt, when the line of separation was drawn, some churches sided with the popular party, while others were numbered with those called Novatian. And, as to the case of Novatian himself, his lack of baptism, if the charge be correct, would no more affect the succession of the Novatians than the lack of baptism upon the part of a few "Baptist" ministers who have received "alien immersion."

Again, Mr. Robinson says: "They say Novatian was the first anti-pope; and yet there was, at that time, no pope in the modern sense of the word. They call Novatian the author of the heresy of Puritanism; yet they know Tertullian had quitted the church near fifty years before for the same reason, and Privatus, who was an old man in the time of Novatian, had, with several more, repeatedly remonstrated against the alterations taking place, and, as they could get no redress, had dissented and formed separate congregations. They tax Novatian with being the parent of an innumerable multitude of congregations of Puritans all over the empire; and yet he had no other influence over any, than what his good example gave him. People saw every-where the same cause of complaint, and groaned for relief, and when one man made a stand for virtue, the crisis had arrived—people saw the propriety of the cure, and applied the same means to their own relief."

Thus it is clearly made out that Novatian was not the founder of the churches called by his name.



---

SECTION II.—ORIGIN OF THE NOVATIANS.

We have already shown, upon good authority, that the Waldenses were descended from the Novatians, and observed the same faith and practice; or, in other words, the same class of Christians who were called Novatians in Italy, were called Waldenses in the valleys of the Alps.

As the modern denominations lay no claim to any historic connection with the Novatians, it will not require much labor to show their Baptist character and connection with the apostolic churches.

The Novatian period extends from about the middle of the third century to the middle of the fifth — about two hundred years.

It is not to be understood that the Novatians began and ended with these periods; but that the witnesses for Christ, in the Roman empire, were called Novatians during the period named. They did not call themselves Novatians at the first, but this name was given by their enemies as a term of reproach.

What is termed by historians the Novatian rupture, did not take place on account of a difference in doctrine, so far as the church ordinances were concerned, but on account of the growing corruptions in some of the churches, in consequence of the lax discipline in the reception of apostates.

When historians use the term Catholic Church with reference to these times — about the third century — they have no allusion to what is now called the Roman Catholic Church; for at that time no such church existed. But in the use of the term Catholic, they only intended to refer to the church in general. And it was this party,



which claimed to be the Catholic, orthodox, or general church, in the third century, that in after times grew to be the Romish Church.

Concerning the cause which led to the division called the Novatian rupture, Mr. Orchard remarks: "When

*Orch. Ch. His.,*  
*vol. I, p. 52.* Decius came to the throne, in 249, he re-

quired, by edicts, all persons in the empire to conform to Pagan worship. Forty years' toleration had greatly increased professors, and they were found in every department of the government. They had been so long unaccustomed to trials, that the lives of many were unsuited to suffering. Decius' edicts rent asunder the churches; multitudes apostatized, and many were martyred. In two years the trial abated, when many apostates applied for restoration to Christian fellowship, and sanctioned their application by letters, written by some eminent Christians who had been martyrs during the persecution. The flagrancy of some apostates occasioned an opposition to their re-admission."

This slack discipline has been the curse of the churches, more or less, in every age. No church can prosper which has not vital action sufficient to throw off the corrupt or foreign matter. For some time before the "Novatian rupture" there had been a growing tendency in some churches toward ministerial usurpation; and the leaven of the mystery of iniquity was at work, which finally produced Antichrist in his full proportions. The time for the "falling away," spoken of by Paul, had now fully come. For it matters not which party is in the majority when a separation occurs, it is always true that the party which departs from the faith has *fallen away*.

It is generally admitted by historians, whether Catholic





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



church derived its origin from the original apostolic church at Rome to whom Paul addressed his letter to the Romans. In fact, the Novatian party were that part of the original church at Rome, founded by the apostles, which preserved the purity of discipline and worship against the growing apostacy which sided with Cornelius. And this firm stand of the Novatians at Rome for virtue, furnished an example for others. Orchard remarks that :

*Orch. Ch. His.,* “ On account of the church’s severity of  
*vol. I, p. 55.* discipline, the example was followed by  
 many, and churches of this order flourished  
 in the greatest part of those provinces which had received  
 the Gospel.”

Therefore, instead of Novatian being the founder of this class of Christians, he only bore testimony, with others, in favor of the purity of discipline which had been preserved from the time of the apostles.

To show that Novatian did not act alone in his early stand for virtue and truth, we here insert a statement from Neander, as follows :

“ As his principles are so clearly to be explained from  
*Neand. His. Chr.* the sternness of his Christian character,  
*Rel. & Ch., p.143.* and as he was acting, in this instance, in  
 the spirit of a whole party of the church  
 existing at that time, there is the less need to resort to an  
 explanation, deduced from an external cause, which is  
 supported by no historical proof.”

This statement of Neander was made in refutation of the charge that Novatian received his principles from the Stoic philosophy. And it shows that, instead of his being the originator of these principles, he only acted in concert with



“a whole party of the church,” which existed before the “Novatian rupture.”

And it is evident that if the Novatians had no just claims to be regarded as the primitive church, they would not have dared, in the face of such powerful and bitter enemies, to claim to be the only Church of Christ on earth. Upon this point, Neander remarks :

“The controversy with the party of Novatian turned upon two general points :

1. On the principles of penitence. *Neand. Ch. His.,*

2. On what constitutes the idea of the p. 145.

essence of a true church.”

In regard to the first point, which Neander calls “penitence”—owing to the fearful corruptions which resulted from the indiscriminate reception of those who had apostatized into paganism and idolatry—the Novatians refused to restore such heinous offenders to church fellowship; but they did not deny that such might obtain forgiveness from God.

And in regard to the second point of difference between the Novatians and the popular party, which involved the Church question, Neander has the following:

“As far as concerns the second point in dispute, the notion of the church, Novatian held the

following opinion: As the mark of purity

and holiness is one of the essential marks

of a true church, every church which, neglecting the right use of church discipline, suffers those who have violated their baptismal vow by great sins to remain in the midst of her, or to receive them into her again, ceases thereby to be a true church, and loses all the rights and advantages of such a church. The Novatianists,

*Neand. Ch. His.,*  
p. 147.



therefore, as they claimed to be the only unstained, pure church, called themselves *oi katharoi*,—‘the pure.’ ”

Since it is allowed on all hands that even the enemies of the Novatians did not charge them with impurity in doctrine or discipline, but only with schism, and that the Catholic party were corrupt in discipline, the claim of the Novatians ought, therefore, to be conceded to them, that they were the pure, uncorrupted apostolic church.

On this claim the editor of the Religious Encyclopedia remarks: “NOVATIANS; a numerous body of Protestant dissenters from the Church of Rome, in the third century, who, notwithstanding the representations of their adversaries, have some just claims to be regarded as the pure, uncorrupted, and apostolic Church of Christ. They called themselves *Cathari*—that is, *the pure*; but they received their name of *Novatians* from their adversaries, after their distinguished leader *Novatian*, who, in the year 251, was ordained the pastor of a church in the city of Rome, which maintained no fellowship with the (so-called) Catholic party.”

This distinguished author affirms that the Novatians have “*just claims to be regarded as the pure, uncorrupted and apostolic Church of Christ.*” This unites the Baptist history to the apostolic churches of Jesus Christ in the first century.

After a thorough examination on this point, Orcharl, the historian, makes the following statement concerning the Novatians: “The churches thus formed upon a plan of strict communion and rigid discipline, obtained the reproach of PURITANS; they were the oldest body of Christian churches

*Religious Encyc.*,  
p. 877.

*Orch. His. Bapt.*,  
vol. I, p. 55.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



admitted into churches but such as were visibly true believers and real saints.

*Secondly:* For the purity of church discipline, as the application of church-censures, and keeping out such as had apostatized or scandalously sinned.

*Thirdly:* They both agreed in asserting the power, rights, and privileges of particular churches, against anti-Christian encroachments of presbyters, bishops, and synods.

*Fourthly:* That they baptized again those whose first baptism they had ground to doubt."

The foregoing, as found in D'Anvers on Baptism, exhibits the fact that the Donatists were but the Novatians of Africa. And although they were called by different names on different continents, yet they were one and the same class of Christians, who were the successors of the original churches that withstood the mighty flood of corruptions which beat upon the Church of Christ in the third, fourth, and fifth centuries.

And that the Novatians adhered to the primitive principles of the first century, is admitted by Mr. Waddington, in his History of the Church. In speaking of the Novatians, whom he dignifies with the title "Sectaries," he

*History of the  
Church, p. 70.*

remarks: "And those rigid principles which had characterized and sanctified the church in the first century were aban-

doned to the profession of schismatic sectaries in the third."

This very important statement of George Waddington, the learned Episcopal historian, establishes two important points:

1. That the Novatians, called *Sectaries* by their ene-



mies, PRESERVED THOSE RIGID PRINCIPLES WHICH HAD CHARACTERIZED AND SANCTIFIED THE CHURCH IN THE FIRST CENTURY.”

2. That the Catholic, or orthodox party, “ABANDONED” THESE PRINCIPLES “TO THE PROFESSION OF SCHISMATIC SECTARIES IN THE THIRD” CENTURY.

Therefore, as the Catholics, or orthodox, were the party which abandoned the primitive principles of Christianity, they were undoubtedly the party that *fell away* or apostatized from the truth. But, on the other hand, as the Novatians were the party which maintained the primitive principles of Christianity, they must be regarded as the original Church, in spite of the pompous pretensions of the so-called Catholics.

While it is an admitted fact that the term *Novatians*, which was applied to the early witnesses for Christ, was derived from Novatian, yet it is not true that he was their founder, or that the church of which he was pastor was the first church in the separation from the popular religion. There were other churches before this, independent of the so-called orthodox, which bore the same testimony for original principles.

I here call attention to a statement from Robinson, introduced in the former section, as follows: “They say Novatian was the first anti-pope; and yet there was, at that time, no pope in the modern sense of the word. They call Novatian the author of the heresy of Puritanism; and yet they know that Tertullian had quitted the church near fifty years before for the same reason; and Privatus, who was an old man in the time of Novatian, had, with several more, repeatedly remonstrated against the alterations tak-

*Rob.'s Eccl. Res.,*  
p. 127.



ing place, and as they could get no redress, had dissented, and formed separate congregations. They tax Novatian with being parent of an innumerable multitude of congregations of Puritans all over the empire; and yet he had no other influence over any than what his good example gave him. People saw every-where the same cause of complaint, and groaned for relief; and when one man made a stand for virtue, the crisis had arrived—people saw the propriety of the cure, and applied the same means to their own relief.”

Thus we discover that even before the time of Novatian, there existed “separate congregations” which bore testimony against the corruptions of the popular party. It is a fact, conceded by all historians, that the primitive churches, with few exceptions, down to the time of Novatian, preserved the church ordinances as they were originally delivered by inspiration.

The corruptions had respect mainly to the lax discipline which prevailed, especially in the city churches. In other words, all parties acknowledge that the main body of the early churches, prior to the middle of the third century, were true churches of Christ, and that they had their origin from Christ and the apostles. And as it has been fully shown, upon good authority, that the Novatians had their origin from these primitive churches, therefore their succession reaches back through the primitive churches to Christ and the apostles.

In regard to these early Baptist churches, Mr. Robinson remarks, that “during the first three centuries, Christian congregations, all over the East, subsisted in separate, independent bodies, unsupported by Government, and conse-





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



stream of Scriptural churches flowing down from Jerusalem through the desert gloom of more than eighteen centuries, and watering the famishing world with the pure Gospel of the River of Life. Here is found the light-house of the world, erected upon the Rock of Eternal Ages, casting its beams of heavenly light far over the stormy seas, while gross darkness enveloped the world, and the multitudes were wondering after the Beast. Notwithstanding we have traced our denominational line of succession directly up to the apostolical age, yet this would avail us nothing if we are found destitute of the peculiar characteristics which distinguished the apostolic churches. We will, therefore, proceed in our next to examine the *Baptist peculiarities* by the light of the New Testament and the practice of the apostolic churches.



## CHAPTER VIII.

### BAPTIST PECULIARITY FIRST—JESUS THE FOUNDER AND HEAD.

1. PECULIARITY FIRST TESTED BY THE BIBLE.
2. PECULIARITY FIRST IDENTIFIED IN PRESENT BAPTIST TEACHING.

#### SECTION I.—BAPTIST PECULIARITY FIRST TESTED BY THE BIBLE.

From the shores of America we have followed the footprints of the Baptist denomination back through England, Holland, Germany, the valleys of Piedmont, and Italy, up to the land of Judea, in the apostolic age. We have found our denominational chain of succession unbroken, though the same people were at different times called by different names. We have now reached the fountain-head of that mighty stream of Scriptural churches flowing down from Jerusalem through the desert gloom of more than eighteen centuries, and watering the famishing world with the pure Gospel of the River of Life. Here may be found the establishment of the Church—the light-house of the world—erected upon the Rock of Eternal Ages, and casting its beams of heavenly light far over the stormy seas of moral darkness, while the multitudes of mankind were enveloped in darkness.

Notwithstanding we have traced our denominational line of succession directly up to the apostolic age, yet this would avail us nothing if we are found destitute of those peculiar characteristics which distinguished the early



churches. In chapter first, we laid down seven *Baptist peculiar characteristics* which now distinguish them from all the parties of Christendom. We now proceed to examine these peculiarities, one by one, by the light of Inspiration, to see if they are sustained by the word of God and examples of the apostolic churches. It was remarked in the outset that no denomination, except the Baptist claims Jesus Christ, in person, as their founder and head. Other denominations look to uninspired men for their origin. Does the Bible sustain the Baptist doctrine that Jesus Christ himself established his own church? To the law and testimony: The Lord spoke by the mouth of Daniel the prophet, and said: “And in the days of these kings  
*Dan. 2: 44.* shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever.” It is generally admitted that this prophecy points to Jesus Christ, who is the God of heaven who was manifested in the flesh. If this be correct, and it can not be reasonably doubted, then it was declared by the prophet, that *Jesus Christ, the God of heaven, should set up the everlasting kingdom.* Does this mean that Abraham should set up the kingdom? that Moses should set it up? that John the Baptist should set it up? that Peter, or all the apostles together, should set it up? No; this work was delegated neither to angels nor men. It was peculiarly the work of the God of heaven. Some assume the position that the God of heaven established his kingdom on earth by proxy—by human agents—as the God of heaven built the temple by Solomon, and wrote the Bible by inspired men. But it must be remembered, that





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



dom set up? We answer, that the setting up of the kingdom, with its laws and ordinances, was not an instantaneous, but a gradual work. John preached the Gospel and prepared materials for the setting up of the kingdom, but Jesus Christ, soon after his own baptism in the river Jordan, chose the twelve apostles who were the first members of the organization known as the church or kingdom of God.

When John beheld the triumphant church as the bride, the Lamb's wife, under the symbol of the great city descending out of heaven from God, he saw "the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb" in the *Rev. 21: 14.* twelve foundation stones. This shows clearly that the twelve apostles were the first or foundation members of the Church of God. A kingdom or church must, of necessity, have a king to rule over it, subjects to be ruled, and laws to be obeyed. Jesus Christ himself is the king, from everlasting to everlasting. The absurd idea of the coronation of Jesus on the day of Pentecost, is false and ridiculous. He possessed kingly glory with the Father before the world was; he was born King of the Jews; he was the "King of Israel" when *John 1: 49.* Nathaniel met him; and he declared himself to be a king at the bar of Pilate. It is a settled point that Jesus Christ was king while on *John 18: 37.* earth, before the day of Pentecost. And the king had subjects to be governed as soon as the apostles left all and followed him. The seventy disciples were soon added to the twelve, and the subjects of the king continued to increase during his ministry. But when were the laws delivered for the government of the kingdom? As Moses came down and delivered the laws to govern na-



tional Israel, after he had fasted forty days on the Mount, so Jesus Christ, after he had fasted forty days during his temptation in the wilderness, began to deliver the laws for the government of his kingdom. The Savior continued to deliver these laws till the night of his betrayal.

After the Lord's Supper was instituted, then Jesus delivered the kingdom, as a complete organization, to the disciples in the following words: "And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me; that ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel." While Jesus Christ the king was personally present with the church, he transacted the business of the kingdom; but he was now about to depart to the Father, and he delivered to his disciples the kingdom, or the authority to execute the laws of the kingdom in the absence of the King. In the same night, in his dedication prayer, the Savior said: "I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do." The setting up of the kingdom was the work assigned by the Father to Jesus Christ; and as he declared that his work was finished, we must conclude that he had completed the setting up of his kingdom. This position is fully illustrated in the building of Solomon's Temple, which was a type of the Church of Christ. Solomon's Temple was built of stones and timbers prepared in the quarry and forests of Lebanon. Solomon did not bring rough materials and place them in the building in order to prepare them, as is done by modern workmen; but each stone and timber was first prepared for its place, and then placed in the temple, and the building progressed to completion without the sound of a hammer. The temple was

*Luke 22: 29, 30.*

*John 17: 4.*



complete, in all of its parts, before it was publicly dedicated to the service of God by prayer and the application of sacrificial blood; likewise the Church of Christ was a complete organization, all of its laws and ordinances had been delivered, before it was publicly dedicated by the prayer of Jesus, recorded in the 17th of John, and the application of his own blood which was shed upon the tree of the Cross. The injunction requiring the apostles to tarry at Jerusalem until they were endued with power from on high, had no reference to the setting up of the kingdom, but to the power to speak *with tongues* and remember all the previous teaching of the Savior. The Baptist position, that Jesus Christ was the founder of his own church, is supported by the language of the Savior himself, as follows:

“And I say also unto thee, that thou art Peter, and upon  
*Matt. 16: 18.* this rock I will build my church; and the  
 gates of hell shall not prevail against it.”

Did the Savior mean that Peter would build his church? that Luther would build his church? that Calvin would build his church? that John Wesley would build his church or that Alexander Campbell would build his church? No. He declared, *I will build my church*; and a church or kingdom built by any one else is not the kingdom of Christ. As already remarked, the establishment of the church as a complete organization was a gradual work from the calling of the apostles to the establishment of the Lord's Supper. This work had been begun before the Savior said, *upon this rock will I build my church*; and he went forward to complete and establish his church upon himself as the only foundation which is able to support his kingdom. The Baptist position has been fully sustained, that Jesus Christ is the founder of his own church,





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.” Once more, writing to the Colossians, Paul affirms that “Jesus Christ is the head of the body, the church, who is the beginning, the first-born from the dead; that in all things he might have the pre-eminence.” From the foregoing, and many similar passages, it is abundantly proved that Jesus Christ alone is to be regarded as the *founder and head* of his own kingdom. The idea of the body of Christ, his church, having a human head, is utterly preposterous. In fact, whenever any one presumes to occupy the place, either as the founder or head of the Church of Christ, he has partaken of the character and prerogative of Antichrist. We now reaffirm that *the Baptist denomination is the only one on earth which claims Jesus Christ in person as its founder and head.*

---

## SECTION II.—BAPTIST AUTHORITY CLAIMING JESUS CHRIST AS THE FOUNDER AND HEAD OF THE CHURCH.

It is almost a work of supererogation to collect testimony on this point; because, all who have even a slight acquaintance with Baptist doctrine, ought to know that it is a fundamental principle with Baptists to claim Jesus Christ as their only founder and head. But, as some are prone to pervert Baptist views, it may not be amiss to gather a few authorities on this important point.

In the Philadelphia Confession of Faith, it is said: *Rel. Denom. U. S. G. B.*, p. 51. “The Lord Jesus Christ is the head of the Church, in whom, by the appointment of



the Father, all power for the calling, institution, order, or government of the church, is invested in a supreme and sovereign manner." This is but the testimony of all the Baptists in the world.

The author of the Religious Encyclopedia, in this point testifies as follows: "They [Baptists] think that the Christian Church, properly so called, was not visibly organized in the family of Abraham, nor in the wilderness of Sinai, but by the ministry of Christ himself, and of his apostles; and that it was then constituted of such, and of such only,

*Religious Encyc.,*  
p. 188.

as made a credible profession of repentance from sin and faith in the Savior." And on the same subject the Baptist Manual, published by the American Baptist Publication Society, remarks: "We acknowledge no founder but Christ." Thus we find, that the Baptists of the present day possess the Bible characteristic, that Jesus Christ in person set up his own kingdom.

*Bapt. Man.,* p. 82.



## CHAPTER IX.

BAPTIST PECULIARITY SECOND—THE BIBLE AS THE  
RULE OF CONDUCT.

1. PECULIARITY SECOND TESTED BY THE BIBLE.
2. PECULIARITY SECOND IDENTIFIED IN PRESENT BAPTIST  
TEACHING.

SECTION I.—BAPTIST PECULIARITY SECOND TESTED  
BY THE BIBLE.

Nearly all parties are agreed that the Scriptures should be the standard of appeal; but, at the same time, many have their own disciplines and confessions of faith, fixing the terms of union and communion. They appeal to these human standards in the transaction of their church business. There are some, however, besides Baptists, who of late profess to be governed by the Bible alone in their church affairs; but it will be found, in the sequel, that they reject a large part even of the New Testament from their standard of worship. It will be found, upon strict inquiry, that the Baptists are the only people who take the Bible alone as their rule of faith and practice in church matters. But is this doctrine, *that the Word of God should be our rule of conduct*, sustained by Inspiration?

The fact that Jesus Christ is King in his kingdom, ought to establish the point, that no authority except his own is binding on his subjects. And it is an admitted fact that the Bible contains the authority or laws of Jesus





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



den underfoot the Son of God, are those who have despised or rejected the laws of Christ; and as those who despised the law of Moses died without mercy, who can estimate the fearful doom of those who disobey Jesus Christ? God said, by the mouth of Samuel the prophet, to king Saul, who departed somewhat from the letter  
1 *Sam.* 15: 22, 23. of the Lord's commandment: "Hath the

Lord as great delight in burnt-offerings and sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the Lord? Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams. For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry. Because thou hast rejected the word of the Lord, he hath also rejected thee from being king." From these passages of Scripture we discover the dreadful turpitude of the sin of despising or disregarding the word of the Lord under any pretext whatever. Jesus said to the Jews: "Howbeit in

*Mark* 7: 7. vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men." This is

positive testimony that the commandments of men are not binding in matters of religion,—that they are *vain worship*. Paul speaks to the same point, as follows: "Where-

*Col.* 2: 20–23. fore if ye be dead with Christ from the

rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to [human] ordinances, (touch not; taste not; handle not; which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men? Which things have indeed a show of wisdom in will worship and humility, and neglecting of the body; not in any honor to the satisfying of the flesh." In this passage the apostle condemns, in unmeasured terms, all the "commandments and doctrines of men," whatever may



be their appearance of wisdom and humility. “For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. *1 Cor. 3: 19.* For it is written, he taketh the wise in their own craftiness.” When we are governed in religious worship by human Disciplines, or Confessions of Faith, we are guilty of following the commandments and doctrines of men. The apostle Paul explains the use of the inspired Scriptures as follows: “All Scripture is given by inspiration of God; and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: that the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.” This sets forth the Scriptures, the Word of God, as the perfect rule of action, by which all acceptable service must be rendered to God. And if we adopt any other rule of action, we reject Jesus Christ as the only Law-giver. In fact, it will be the words of Jesus Christ by which we shall be judged in that great day when the dead, small and great, shall stand before the throne of God; for Jesus has declared that, “He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day. For I have not spoken of myself: but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak.” And in view of being judged by the Word of God, we have, in the last chapter of Revelation, the following terrible warning: “For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this Book, if any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this Book; and if any man shall take away from the words of

*2 Tim. 3: 16, 17.*

*John 12: 48, 49.*

*Rev. 22: 18, 19.*



the Book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the Book of Life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this Book.”

In the face of these Scriptures, how dare any one to adopt, as authority in religion, any *rule* except the Word of God? As the New Testament is the last Will of our Lord Jesus Christ, it contains all the duties enjoined upon the children of God in the Christian dispensation. While the New Testament is our standard of appeal, we regard the Old Testament as necessary to confirm and establish the New. Thus we have found that the second Baptist peculiarity, as introduced in the first chapter of this work, is fully sustained by the inspired Word.

---

## SECTION II.—PECULIARITY SECOND IDENTIFIED IN PRESENT BAPTIST TEACHING.

*That the Bible alone is to be regarded as the rule of faith and practice, all Baptists hold with unyielding tenacity.*

It is true that Baptists have, at different times, written their views on the prominent points of Scripture doctrine, which has proved very important as a matter of history; but they appeal to no other standard except the Bible, in the reception, discipline and exclusion of members.

Dr. Wayland remarks: “The question is frequently asked, What is the creed, and what are the acknowledged standards of the Baptist churches in this country? To this the general answer has ever been, ‘Our rule of faith and practice is the New Testament.’ We have no other authority to which we all profess submission.”

*Prin. and Prac.  
of Bapts., p. 13.*





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



order to the conversion of the world. The design of this oneness was not simply to assemble together a mass of persons holding all sorts of doctrines. The apostle exhorted the brethren as follows: "I beseech  
1 Cor. 1: 10. you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you: but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind, and in the same judgment." And in order to this oneness, in mind and judgment, it becomes absolutely necessary for those who desire *to dwell together in unity* to express themselves in regard to the leading points in Bible doctrine.

If they design to be united in church capacity, it is necessary for persons to express themselves, at least on all those points which are essential to church organization; for if persons should assemble together simply on the profession that they believe the Bible, then we might have Roman Catholics, Episcopalians, Presbyterians, Lutherans, and Methodists, with all other Pedobaptists; and also we would have Unitarians, Universalists, Quakers, Campbellites, and Mormons, all united with Baptists on the vague profession of believing the Bible. We must not only receive the Bible as our standard theoretically, but we must make it our rule of action. Therefore, in the midst of such a multitude of opposing parties and doctrines, it becomes absolutely necessary for those who would dwell together to express their views of Bible doctrine; and as a summary of faith must be expressed in order to Christian union, it can certainly be no more harm to write it than to express it orally. This summary of doctrine, whether written or unwritten, is the creed of the individual who holds it; it is a Bible



creed only so far as it comports with Inspiration. On this subject, Mr. Jeter writes as follows: "Every intelligent Christian has a creed, written or unwritten. There are certain facts, truths, and principles which he believes and maintains, and the belief of which he deems essential to the essence of true holiness. He may or may not write these articles of his belief; but they are equally his creed, and equally efficacious in controlling his conduct, whether they are written or unwritten. The writing of them is merely placing in a visible form what previously existed in his mind, and doing so contravenes no law of Christ and violates no moral obligation. But what is here affirmed of an individual, may with equal clearness and propriety be affirmed of a church of Christ."

*Campbellism Exposed*, p. 34.

But it must be remembered that such "creeds," or expressions of faith, are not appealed to in the reception, trial, and exclusion of members among Baptists. In answer to the charge made by Alexander Campbell, that the Baptists had a Confession of Faith as a bond of union, Elder J. L. Waller says: "Let us, then, calmly examine creeds, as used by the Baptists, and see what there is in the matter so terrible to Christians. And we here state, and we defy all contradiction, that the only bond of union and communion ever recognized by the Baptist denomination, is the BIBLE. This every man acquainted with their history knows to be the truth. They never published any creed, long or short, at any time, as a bond of union and communion. These, we say, are notorious facts, and we assert them in the face of the thousand and one statements to the contrary, made, of late years, in print and in the

*Baptist Review*,  
1845, p. 133.



pulpit. That the Baptists have creeds, is admitted ; but that these creeds are used as bonds of union, is denied." In explanation of the use of creeds among Baptists, Mr. Waller

*Ibid.*, p. 134. continues: "The first Confession of Faith

ever published by the Baptists in England, was in 1643. They prefaced it thus: 'A Confession of Faith of seven congregations or churches of Christ, in London, which are commonly, but unjustly, called Anabaptists; *published for the vindication of the truth and information of the ignorant; likewise for the taking off those aspersions which are frequently, both in pulpit and print, unjustly cast upon them.*' You will remark that it was published for the vindication of the truth, and to remove unjust imputations, under which the Baptists were suffering, and not as terms of union and communion." And it will be found that Baptists have often published an expression of faith for the information of the *ignorant*, for the vindication of the truth, and to stand as a matter of history to point out to future generations the principles for which they suffered. This Confession of Faith, referred to by Elder Waller, may be found in the appendix to the first volume of Crosby's History of English Baptists, page 7.

Again, in the year 1689, the delegates of more than one hundred churches met in London and republished the former Confession of Faith, "for the satisfaction of all other Christians that differ from us in the point of baptism." Various other expressions of faith and *practice* have been published by the Baptists, at different times, down to that published by the Philadelphia Association in 1742. And this association repeated the language of the English Baptists as a reason for its publication. These American Baptists, like their English brethren, felt them-





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



## CHAPTER X.

## BAPTIST PECULIARITY THIRD—ORDER OF THE COMMANDMENTS.

1. PECULIARITY THIRD TESTED BY THE BIBLE.

2. PECULIARITY THIRD IDENTIFIED IN PRESENT BAPTIST TEACHING.

## SECTION I.—BAPTIST PECULIARITY THIRD TESTED BY THE BIBLE.

*Baptists hold the Bible order of the commandments; they teach Repentance, Faith, Baptism, and the Lord's Supper.* This is emphatically a Baptist peculiarity; this order is not even professed by any other denomination on earth. This is a very important feature or point of doctrine, which will aid us in identifying the true Church of Christ. Jesus Christ not only established laws for the government of his disciples, but he established the precise order in which those laws must be obeyed. To violate the order of a law, is to disregard the law itself, and treat the law-giver with contempt. For the officers of a civil government to pretend to enforce the laws by inverting the order of their application, would involve them in the censure of the government, and the forfeiture of their office. That one who changes the order of the laws of Christ, arrays himself as a rebel against his government. Paul said to the Corinthians: “Now I praise you, brethren, that you remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances as I delivered them to you.” These brethren were not at liberty to change the

1 Cor. 11: 2.



ordinances; they were to keep them as they *were delivered*. Of these four important commands, two—*repentance* and *faith*—are enjoined upon sinners in order to their pardon; and the other two—*baptism* and the *Lord's Supper*—are enjoined upon the children of God in order to their Christian duty and advancement in divine life. As regards the order of repentance and faith, the Bible is clear. Jesus said to those who believed in the existence of God: “Repent ye, and believe the Gos- *Mark 1: 15.* pel.” It is freely admitted that before one can repent, he “must believe that God is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek *Heb. 11: 6.* him.” But devils and wicked men may believe this much, and even tremble, without possessing *faith with the heart*. It is the faith that *works by love, purifies the heart, implies trust in Christ, and is with the heart*, which follows repentance, and is necessary to the pardon of sins. This is that faith referred to by the apostle, when he said: “One Lord, *one faith*, one *Eph. 4: 5.* baptism.” There are false gods, but only one true God; there are false baptisms, but only one true baptism approved by Jesus Christ; there is a *dead faith*, without works, which wicked men and devils may possess without repentance, but there is only *one faith* with the heart in the Lord Jesus Christ. It is the *heart-faith* which follows repentance, and through which salvation, the gift of God, is bestowed. When Jesus Christ preached to the Jews, he said: *Repent ye, and believe the Gospel*. Did he make a mistake as to the order? Our modern Reformers, who are wise above that which is written, reprove the Savior by changing his order; they say: *Believe and repent!* When Jesus reproved the chief priests and the



elders for rejecting the Gospel as preached by John, he said unto them: “Verily I say unto you, that the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you. For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not; but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye, when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.” Mark the fact, that Jesus made *repentance in order to faith*. Paul, acting under the immediate commission and authority of Jesus Christ, laid down the order in which he performed his mission, as follows: “Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, *repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ*.” Paul certainly understood the order of these commandments; he preached the same order to Jews and Gentiles—repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ. And it should be remembered, that in every passage in the entire Bible where repentance and faith are mentioned together, repentance is always first in point of order; and he who dares to change this order, incurs the anathema of Jesus Christ for preaching another Gospel. For the further discussion of this subject, the reader is referred to my book on Campbellism. This part of the Baptist order is fully sustained by the Scriptures.

We now proceed to examine the relative order of baptism—the third command in this chain of obedience. I believe that it is generally admitted that the commission given by Jesus Christ before his ascension, contains all the authority for the administration of baptism. The execution of the commission is committed to the churches of Christ as his representatives on earth. The great com-





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



before baptism. And it is said of the Samaritans, that:

*Acts 8: 12.* “When they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.” Mark the fact, that the people of Samaria

“believed” before they were baptized. When the eunuch

*Acts 8: 37.* demanded baptism, then “Philip said, if thou believest with all thy heart, thou mayest.”

Once more: it is recorded, concerning the jailer, that he

*Acts 16: 34.* “Rejoiced, believing in God, with all his house.” And in the case of all the other

household baptisms, there are circumstances mentioned which go to prove that none were baptized except adults.

There can no instance be found in the Scriptures deviating from the commission which requires faith in order to baptism. We now advance one step further in the examination of the Baptist order of teaching—repentance, faith, baptism, and the Lord’s Supper—and ask the question, Does the Bible sustain the position that baptism should precede the Lord’s Supper? We first introduce the example of Jesus Christ, who was baptized before he instituted or partook of the supper with his disciples. Also, the apostles had been baptized before the institution of the supper.

And the commission itself fixes baptism as the first duty after believing with the heart; therefore, under the commission no one can commune before baptism. The communion, is one of those things which was to be observed after baptism. The Savior established the com-

*Luke 22: 29, 30.* munion in his kingdom; for he said, “And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me; that ye may eat and drink



at my table in my kingdom;" and as baptism is essential to membership in the visible kingdom, therefore baptism must, of necessity, precede the Lord's Supper, which is in the Lord's kingdom. In fact, there is no instance on Divine record where any unbaptized person ever approached the Lord's table. It was after the Pentecostean converts had been baptized and added to the church, that they "Continued steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in *breaking of bread*, and in prayers." This breaking of bread, no doubt, had reference to the Lord's Supper; therefore, none except the baptized in church fellowship have the right to the Lord's table. The invitation of the unbaptized to the Lord's Supper is a modern custom, gotten up for the sake of popularity.

*Acts 2: 42.*

The Communion question will be discussed in another chapter.

We have now seen that the third peculiarity is fully sustained by Inspiration. The Bible teaches *Repentance, Faith, Baptism, and the Lord's Supper*, as the divine order of these requirements.

---

## SECTION II.—PECULIARITY THIRD—THE BIBLE ORDER OF REPENTANCE, FAITH, BAPTISM, AND THE LORD'S SUPPER — IDENTIFIED WITH THE PRESENT BAPTIST TEACHING.

But little need be said in locating this as a Baptist peculiarity, from the fact that no other denomination claims this order. Be it remembered that the Baptists are the only people who advocate the Bible order of the commandments. It is admitted that some Baptists recently,



especially in England, have adopted the open communion custom of receiving the unbaptized to the communion; but they do not plead either Scripture precept or example for such a practice. In order to identify peculiarity third with the present Baptist practice, it is only necessary to appeal to the united testimony of the great mass of Baptists as set forth in their preaching and writings. I will, however, introduce a few authorities on this point.

In a Confession of Faith, presented by the English Baptists to Charles II., in article eleventh we have the following: “That the right and only way of gathering churches (according to Christ’s appointment, Matt. xxviii: 19, 20,) is first to teach or preach the Gospel (Mark xvi: 16) to the sons and daughters of men; and then to *baptize* (that is, in *English*, to *dip*) in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, or in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, such only of them as profess *repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ*.” And in article thirteenth of the same Confession, these persecuted Baptists say: “That it is the duty of such, who are constituted as aforesaid, to continue steadfastly in Christ’s and the apostles’ doctrine, and assembling together in fellowship, in breaking of bread and prayers. Acts ii: 42.” The above Confession was signed by the London Baptists, and approved by *twenty thousand* members. They firmly maintained the Bible order of *repentance*, faith, baptism, and the breaking of bread, or the Supper, in fellowship after baptism. We are informed, by Mr. Orchard, that in the times of King James I. the English Baptists “Held that repentance and faith must precede baptism; that the baptism of the Church of

*Crosby’s His. E. Bapt., vol. II, Ap., p. 81.*

*Orch. His. Bapt., vol. II, p. 250.*





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



believers, and the breaking of bread, in the Supper, by those in church fellowship.

Once more: In the Baptist Confession of Faith, published, from time to time, in England, and adopted by the Philadelphia Association in 1742, and republished lately in the Religious Denominations, by Joseph Belcher, we

*Rel. Denom.*, p. 203. have the following: “Those who actually profess repentance toward God, faith in, and obedience to, our Lord Jesus, are the only proper subjects of this ordinance”—baptism. The Baptist order is only the Bible order of the commands.



## CHAPTER XI.

## BAPTIST PECULIARITY FOURTH—BURIAL IN BAPTISM OF THE DEAD TO SIN

1. BAPTIST PECULIARITY FOURTH TESTED BY THE BIBLE.
2. PECULIARITY FOURTH IDENTIFIED IN PRESENT BAPTIST TEACHING.

## SECTION I.—BAPTIST PECULIARITY FOURTH TESTED BY THE BIBLE.

*Baptists immerse, or bury with Christ in baptism, only those who profess to be dead to, or freed from, sin.* Like the others, this peculiarity belongs alone to Baptists. All other denominations either fail to bury in baptism, or baptize those whom they admit to be unpardoned sinners. This will be seen when we come to examine the claims of others. I do not purpose to enter upon the discussion of what is usually called the “mode” of baptism, in this work. It will not, however, be amiss at this point to introduce a few Scripture proofs to sustain the position that baptism is immersion, or a burial.

The meaning of the Greek word *baptizo*, which was used by the Savior to designate his command, ought forever to settle the action of baptism in every unbiased mind. It is known that its ordinary and primary meaning is *to immerse*, or its equivalent; and that no standard Greek lexicon gives either “sprinkle” or “pour” as a meaning of the word *baptizo* at all. It is absolutely impossible for the ordinance of baptism to be three different and opposite



actions. If sprinkling is the fulfillment of the command to be baptized, then pouring and immersion are not; if pouring is the fulfillment of the command, then sprinkling and immersion are not; but if immersion is the fulfillment of the command to be baptized, then sprinkling and pouring are not.

*First:* My first proof is based upon the example of the baptism of Jesus Christ. The notion that the Savior was baptized to initiate him into his priestly office, is unknown to the Scriptures; and was only invented to escape the force of the example of the Son of God in favor of immersion. The Savior received only one “mode” of baptism; therefore, his example can not be plead in favor of

*Heb. 2: 17.* three “modes.” The apostle said that: “In all things it behooved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful High Priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people.” He required his disciples, his brethren, to be baptized; he, therefore, left his example to stimulate others in the discharge of duty. He required all, in becoming members of the church, to be baptized; and he did not, therefore, violate his own law in becoming Head over all things to the church. Several facts should be observed in connection with the baptism of Jesus: *first*, he came to John the Baptist, the only person in the world then authorized to administer baptism—he did not receive “alien” baptism; *second*, in order to be baptized, he went down into the water of the river Jordan; *third*, after his baptism, he came up out of the water; *fourth*, while in the water, he was buried in baptism; for Paul says: “Therefore, we are [were, aorist tense] buried with him by bap-

*Rom. 6: 4.*





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



plunging the whole body-under the water.” We might multiply quotations to show that the most learned Pedobaptist scholars concede the point, that the baptism performed by John the Baptist and Jesus Christ was performed by immersion.

*Second:* The places where baptism was performed indicate that it must have required more water than is used for sprinkling. Mark says: “And there went out unto him all of the land of Judea, and they of Jerusalem, and were all baptized of him in the River of Jordan, confessing their sins.” Also: “And John also was baptizing in Enon, near to Salim, because there was much water there; and they came, and were baptized.” Thus we see, that in the time of Christ, baptism was performed *in the river of Jordan*, or where there was “much water”; and the people “came,” were not brought, in order to be baptized.

*Third:* Immersion is implied in the circumstances attending the baptism of the eunuch; for it is said that, “They went down into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him. And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing.” It will be observed, that both the administrator and candidate went *down into the water*, and after the baptism they *came up out of the water*, which would have been wholly unnecessary in the supposition that sprinkling was performed.

*Fourth:* The design of baptism absolutely requires that it must be performed by a burial, or an immersion. Baptism is sometimes spoken of as being *for the remission*, or



*washing away* of sins. Ananias said to Saul: “And now, why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord.” *Acts 22: 16.* Some have fallen into the egregious error, that baptism is literally for the *remission* or *washing away* of sins. It is evident, however, that we only *wash away* sins in baptism in the same sense that we eat the flesh and drink the blood of Christ in the Supper. Jesus said of the bread, “This is my body;” and of the wine, “This is my blood.” And the Catholic, in his superstition, takes the language of Jesus literally, and, therefore, worships the bread and wine as the actual body and blood of Jesus; and in like manner, some Protestants have taken those passages literally which speak of baptism as being for the remission of sins; and they, therefore, depend on baptism as the condition of the actual pardon of sins. They have fallen into the same error, on this point, into which the Catholics have fallen on the communion question. The truth is, that we only eat the flesh and drink the blood of Jesus emblematically in the Supper, and likewise sins are washed away emblematically in baptism. But as we represent the washing away of sins in baptism, how much of the subject should be washed? As he is, in a state of nature, entirely sinful, in order to represent the washing away of sins, the subject should have an entire washing, a burial with Christ in baptism. Nothing less than an immersion will properly represent the washing away of sins.

*Fifth:* Once more: the prominent design of baptism is to represent the burial and resurrection of the dead. Paul introduced in his argument in favor of the resurrection, baptism as a witness of the resurrection of the dead. He



1 Cor. 15: 29. said: "Else what shall they do, which are baptized for the dead, if the dead rise not at all. Why are they then baptized for the dead?"

Paul introduced baptism here as a witness to prove the resurrection of the dead; but as nothing except immersion represents the resurrection, therefore, nothing except immersion is the baptism for which Paul contended. The celebrated commentator, Dr. Clark, says on this passage:

Com. on 1 Cor., 15: 29. "But as they received baptism as an emblem of death in voluntarily going under the water, so they receive it as an emblem

of the resurrection unto eternal life in coming up out of the water. Thus they are baptized for the dead in perfect faith of the resurrection." It is evident that, as the Lord's Supper, as a monument, commemorates the sufferings and death of Jesus Christ, so baptism, as a monument, commemorates, or shows forth, his *burial* and *resurrection*. When an individual has been spiritually crucified with Christ, or killed to the love of sin, and is dead to, or freed from sin, he should be buried with Christ in baptism, and arise to walk in newness of life. This is taught in Paul's letter to the Romans, where he asks:

Rom. 6: 2-7. "How shall we that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ, were baptized into his death? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For, if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



fore he is freed from sin, and is a child of God, before baptism; *fourth*, the believer in Christ has already passed from death unto life, and shall not come into condemnation; therefore he is freed from sin before baptism, because he has passed from death unto life before baptism. And if the pardon of sins does not really occur when one becomes a true believer *in* Christ, then a large part of the New Testament can not be true. We find that the Baptist peculiarity fourth is fully sustained in the Word of God. The Bible teaches the *burial with Christ in baptism only of those who profess to be dead to, or freed from, sin.*

## SECTION II.—PECULIARITY FOURTH IDENTIFIED IN PRESENT BAPTIST TEACHING.

It is really unnecessary to introduce witnesses to prove that Baptists universally teach immersion as the only Scriptural action of baptism. The editor of the Religious Encyclopedia remarks on this subject: “That in the opin-

*Religious Encyc.,* ion of Baptists, baptism is the *immersion*  
p. 181. *in water of a suitable candidate, in the*

*Holy Ghost.* The only suitable candidate is a person who has been born of the Spirit, and who is united to Christ by *faith.*” Again, the same author says: “In regard to this

*Religious Encyc.,* ordinance of Christ, ‘they have ever held,’  
p. 181. says Mr. Benedict, their historian, ‘that

a personal profession of faith, and an immersion in water, are essential to baptism.’” And in the same work, article twelfth of the Baptist Declaration of Faith reads as follows: “OF BAPTISM AND THE LORD’S



SUPPER.—That Christian baptism is the immersion of a believer in water, in the name of the Father, Son, and Spirit; to show forth in a solemn and beautiful emblem, our faith in a crucified, buried, and risen Savior, with its purifying power; that it is prerequisite to the privileges of a church relation; and to the Lord's Supper, in which the members of the church, by the use of bread and wine, are to commemorate together the dying love of Christ; preceded always by solemn self-examination." In fact, no one has ever accused the Baptists of holding anything less than an immersion or burial in water for baptism. But some persons, through ignorance or prejudice, have accused the Baptists with teaching baptismal salvation; therefore, a few other proofs on this point will be given. Mr. Robinson, the Baptist historian, says: "Baptism is a relative institution, and all Christians consider it so. Some think it is an institution connected with a profession of Christianity, and, of course, it is related only to temporal church fellowship. This is the opinion of Baptists. Others suppose it is connected with sanctification, and the pardon of sin, and related to the future state, and consequently that it is necessary to salvation." Thus we have the Baptist view, that while baptism is a solemn duty enjoined upon every child of God as a prerequisite to church fellowship and communion, they do not regard it as essential to salvation.

*Religious Encyc.,*  
p. 191.

*Eccl. Res.,* p. 471.

Joseph Belcher, speaking of Baptists, remarks that: "It is true that they regard baptism as an essential ordinance of the Christian Church, and that no one can be a member of that church unless he be baptized. It is also true that they do

*Rel. Denom.,* pp  
215, 216.



not regard any other mode of administering this ordinance as valid or Scriptural, except immersion. And hence, it is also true, that they refuse to admit those to commune with them, who, though baptized by sprinkling, have never been baptized by immersion. \* \* \* \* It is proper, further, to remark, that Baptists do not, as is sometimes erroneously asserted, regard baptism as possessing in itself any irresistible influence in sanctifying those who receive it. They regard it as the outward *sign* of the inward change; and not the *means* by which repentance and sanctification are produced." Baptists do not regard baptism as the "means" of pardon. In fact, the Baptists are the only denomination that performs baptism at all, which is not, more or less, chargeable with the doctrine of *baptismal salvation*. Catholics hold that the unbaptized are damned. Protestant Pedobaptists hold that baptism is the *seal of the covenant of grace*, and the modern *Reformers* make baptism regeneration itself, and essential to salvation; but Baptists hold, as they have ever done, that none have a right to baptism till they are already *pardoned* and *saved*. So, instead of holding baptismal salvation, the Baptists teach, *that salvation from sin is essential to baptism*. Baptists stand out in Christendom alone against the Romish dogma of baptismal salvation. This is a fundamental doctrine with them. Mr. Benedict shows the absurdity of *baptismal* regeneration, on page 286 of the History of the Baptists.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



hill shall be made low: and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough places plain." This prediction indicates the grand mission of the kingdom of heaven, in leveling, in a religious point of view, the human family. The kings and nobles of earth are to be brought down, and the poor, lame, halt, and blind, are to be raised to the dignity of fellow-citizens with the saints in the kingdom of God.

Since the fall of man, there has ever rankled in his bosom the spirit of pride, which prompts him to seek the opportunity to usurp authority over his fellow men. And even Christians are not entirely free from this spirit of Antichrist. The apostles themselves had strife among them as to which should be accounted the greatest. But Jesus firmly rebuked the very first buddings of this spirit of error, as follows: "But Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them, Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles, exercise lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them. But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister; and whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all." And just before the Savior's death, he repeated the same lesson of instruction to his disciples, as follows: "And he said unto them, the kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors. But ye shall not be so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve." How daring must be that pride that, in the face of these instructions, would prompt any one to claim the pre-eminence, or usurp authority



over his brethren! It is almost universally admitted, that the churches of Jesus Christ are the executives of his kingdom, appointed to execute the laws of the King. Now, if this position be correct, then all the members of each church are authorized to participate in the transaction of business, unless some of them are expressly prohibited by the Word of God; but no class of church members are prohibited from a participation in the transaction of business; therefore, all the members are authorized to act in the transaction of business.

But the question may be asked: "Do not the ministers or elders possess superior authority to rule over the churches, and execute the laws of the kingdom?" It is very important that we should understand the meaning of the New Testament ruling by the elders or pastors of the churches. This New Testament *ruling* is not to do all the voting, and transact all the business of a church in matters of discipline, *but to give them meat in due season*; for Jesus "The Lord said, who then is that faithful and wise steward whom his Lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season?" The Lord has made these "rulers" over his house, not to decide cases of discipline, *but to give them their portion of meat in due season*. He has appointed them to *feed his sheep and lambs*. It is further evident, from the language of Peter, that the elders of the churches are to rule by *advice* and *example*, and not by deciding cases of discipline. Peter said: "The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed: feed the

Luke 12: 42.

John 21: 16.

1 Peter 5: 1-3.



flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; neither as being lords over God's heritage, but being ensamples to the flock."

Thus we find that the elders are to rule *by example* and *by feeding* the flock of Christ. Whatever may be the different gifts or offices in the Church of Christ, no member has a right to claim the pre-eminence in the execution of the laws of Christ. The very fact that the ministers or elders are chosen or ordained by the churches, proves that they are inferior in point of authority to the churches which have invested them with the ministerial office. The apostles themselves only claimed to be servants of the

churches; for Paul said: "We preach not  
2 Cor. 4: 5.

ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake." The only way to become great in the kingdom of Jesus, is to be a great servant. Every minister is equal in point of privilege with every other member of the church; but, as a minister in his official capacity, he is subject to, and inferior to the church. His individual acts or decisions have no more binding force than those of any other member. It appears, from the Scriptures, that all the true members of the churches in the kingdom of Christ, have equal privileges in the following particulars: *First*: The true members of the kingdom of Christ have been made equally free from the bondage of sin. Jesus said: "If the Son,

therefore, shall make you free, ye shall be  
John 8: 36. free indeed." And this spiritual freedom

applies to all classes, male and female, bond and free. *Second*: They are all equally the children of God; the apostle says: "For ye are all the children of God by





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



wherein he was called. Art thou called being a servant? Care not for it: but if thou mayest be free, use it rather. For he that is called in the Lord, being a servant, is the Lord's free man: likewise also he that is called being free, is Christ's servant. Ye are bought with a price; be not ye the servants of men. Brethren, let every man, wherein he is called, therein abide with God." Thus we learn, that the servant who is called of God, "is the Lord's free man," and is commanded to be not the servant of men in matters of religion; yet he is required to abide as a servant to his master, unless he may be free lawfully. And the apostle Paul said to Philemon, of one of these servants, Onesimus, who had escaped from his master: "For per-  
*Philemon*, 15-17. haps he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldst receive him forever; not now as a servant, but above a servant, a brother beloved, especially to me, but how much more unto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord? If thou count me therefore a partner, receive him as myself." Mark you, Paul sent this servant to his master, "a brother beloved," to be received as Paul himself. Are we to infer from this that Onesimus should have no right to vote in the church, because he was not his own master in worldly affairs? And, if so, may we not infer that Paul himself, while a "prisoner" in "bonds," had no right to vote in the church, because he was not a free man in worldly matters? The truth of the matter is this, we are only under obligation to obey the political powers that be, in political affairs; and whether we are bond or free, male or female, when those powers interfere with our duty to God, we should say, with the apostles: "We ought  
*Acts* 5: 29. to obey God rather than men."



---

Another objection is urged to this principle of equality in the kingdom of Christ, on the supposition that minors or children, subject to their parents, have no right to participate in the transaction of church business. This objection, like the former, in the case of servants, is not based upon any Scripture prohibiting them from the transaction of business, but upon the fact that they, like slaves, are under the control of others, and upon their supposed incompetency to perform such duties. If the question of eligibility to vote in the transactions of church business is to be decided by one's majority, or freedom from his parents according to political laws, then in some governments persons would be eligible to transact church business much younger than in others; and the Jewish Christians were not eligible to vote in church affairs until they were thirty years old; for they were subject to their parents, at least, until that age; and worse still, it would make the duty of some members, in the worship of God, depend upon the caprice and even injustice of human laws. But if this question is to be determined by the supposed competency or incompetency of the church members, then quite a number of the male members who are of age will be found, at least in the estimation of our wise brethren, to be wholly incompetent to vote in the church. Then who will decide upon the competency of the members to transact church business? Whenever it is proved that any class of members have no right to assist in the transaction of church business, then it will have been proved that the same class have no right to church membership at all. The objection which is urged against the voting in the church of servants, minors, and women on the ground that they have no right to rule over masters, pa-



rents, and husbands, does not touch the question ; for the same argument would prove that masters, fathers, and husbands have no right to vote in church, because they, no more than the others, have the right to rule over servants, children and wives in matters of religion. Jesus Christ is the sole Ruler in Zion. In the execution of the laws of Christ in the transaction of church business, no church has a right to deviate from the laws of Christ ; and if any action of a church comports with the New Testament, then it is not the church *ruling*, but only executing an order of the *Ruler*. But if any church deviates from the laws of Christ in its action, that action is null and void, and binding on no one.

But the objection which opposes the participation of women in the business transactions of the churches is of more serious import, from the fact that all admit that there are restrictions regulating the duties of women in the public meetings of the churches. But to what particular acts these restrictions apply, is the point in question. Paul

1 *Cor.* 14: 34, 35. said to the Corinthians: "Let your women keep silence in the churches; for it is not permitted unto them to speak: but they are commanded to be under obedience, as also saith the law. And if they will learn anything, let them ask their husbands at home; for it is a shame for women to speak in the church." "Let

1 *Tim.* 2: 11, 12. the woman learn in silence with all subjection. But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence." This strong language of the apostle Paul most certainly restricts women from the exercise of certain duties or privileges belonging to men. But are we to infer from this, that women are debarred from the exercise





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



virgins, which did prophesy.” Philip, the evangelist, who was filled with the Holy Spirit, permitted his four virgin daughters to prophesy, or teach publicly; and Paul allowed women to pray and prophesy, with their heads covered, in the church; and yet he requires women not to speak, but to keep silence in the churches. Does Paul contradict himself? Verily not; therefore, we conclude that under some circumstances women may teach and pray in the congregation, and under others they must not. And I suppose, from the connection, that the women are required not to speak in church controversies on litigated questions. But that she may speak or teach in the church, under some circumstances, is evident from the fact that the apostle gives directions as to the manner in which it should be done. But the question whether women should, or should not, teach publicly in the churches, has no bearing whatever, that I can see, upon the question of the privilege of women to aid in the transaction of church business by casting their lots, or voting. Some have pressed this objection so far that they affirm that for a woman to raise her hand to vote, would amount to speaking, because “actions speak louder than words”! But this objection would lie with equal force against the duty of women confessing their faith in Christ, being baptized, uniting with the church, or even going to the house of God at all. Again, the question is asked, “Should not religious women be willing to trust their husbands and fathers to transact the business of the church, or act for them in voting?” This would make the husbands and fathers occupy the place of god-fathers for their wives and daughters. This would be sponsorial religion—worshiping God by proxy. Then, why not the husband and father be baptized, and



receive the Lord's Supper, and perform all other religious duties, instead of his wife or daughters? The worship of God requires individual and personal obedience. No one can perform a religious act in lieu of another.

Another objection arises on the score of delicacy—that some questions come before churches unsuitable for ladies to hear. The same objection is urged against ladies being immersed; for it is alleged to be indecent. Questions of religious duty are not to be settled by the fictitious delicacy of modern times. The only question should be, “What is truth?” in matters of religion. And more: it is not always absolutely necessary for the congregation to hear all the details of evidence in cases of church trial. In the case of the incestuous man in the church at Corinth, it was not necessary to enter into all the details; but Paul announced the fact of the man's guilt, and the church excluded him. Not many worse cases than this are likely to occur in the history of church trials. And the very same objections are urged sometimes against reading the Scriptures,—that the Bible contains some things too delicate for them to read! But enough of this; it is absolutely certain that the churches of Christ are constituted the depositories of truth, and are under obligation to act in the execution of the laws of Christ; but women are recognized in the Scriptures as church members; therefore, women are authorized to participate in the execution of the laws of Christ, or in the transaction of church business.

*Fourth:* All the members are equal as to the terms of their reception into church fellowship; they are all required to *repent, believe in Christ, and be buried with him in baptism*, in order to church membership.

*Fifth:* The members of the true churches of Christ



are equal in privilege and duty, in the trial and exclusion of disorderly persons. Jesus himself has laid down the law upon this point; for he says: “Moreover, if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as a heathen man and a publican.” Mark: the command is, to tell the grievance “unto the church,” not to a certain class of *rulers*; and the offender is required to “hear the church,” not a class of self-appointed judges in the church. The church is composed of all its members; and as there are no restrictions for or against any class, therefore we must come to the irresistible conclusion that *the church* means *the church*, the local assembly of which the offender is a member. But if this command ever comports with the new views of church government now being advocated by some of the brethren, it will have to be reconstructed, or translated so as to read as follows: “And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the male members of the church over twenty-one years of age: but if he shall neglect to hear the male members of the church over twenty-one years of age, let him be unto thee as a heathen man and a publican.”

That it was the duty of the church, not a part only, to act in the exclusion of members, is seen in the advice of the apostle Paul to the church at Corinth, 1 Cor. 5: 4-7. as follows: “In the name of our Lord





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



“The saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicholas, a proselyte of Antioch.” Does the whole multitude who choose the deacons, only mean the male members over thirty years of age? *Eighth:* The members of the apostolic churches were equal in privilege and duty in sending out delegates or messengers to promote the interests of a cause; the church at Jerusalem sent delegates to Antioch to settle the dispute about circumcision. It is recorded thus: “Then pleased it the apostles and elders, with the whole church, to send chosen men of their own company to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas: namely, Judas surnamed Barsabas, and Silas, chief men among the brethren.” “The whole church” acted with the apostles and elders in choosing and sending messengers to Antioch. And the same was true in sending out missionaries. Paul says: “Whether any do inquire of Titus, he is my partner and fellow-helper concerning you; or our brethren be inquired of, they are the messengers of the churches, and the glory of Christ.” These missionaries were not messengers of a privileged class in the churches, but of the churches which sent them out. It is now fully settled that the membership in the churches of Christ are privileged to participate in all church transactions. The doings of a certain class in a church can not properly be called church actions.

*Acts 15: 22.*

*2 Cor. 8: 23.*



---

SECTION II.—PECULIARITY FIFTH IDENTIFIED WITH PRESENT BAPTIST DOCTRINE.

The following sentiment, as quoted from the Christian Review, by Joseph Belcher, is eminently true: "Religious liberty is a Baptist watch-word, a kind of talisman, which operates like a charm, and nerves every man for action." Whatever shades of difference in opinion may have prevailed among Baptists on minor questions, they have ever been perfectly agreed in this peculiarity. They claim no King, Lord, or Ruler, over the conscience, except Jesus Christ. Baptist sentiments on this point are clearly expressed in the Religious Encyclopedia, as follows: "Hence, also, they reject all claims of the civil magistrate to any but civil jurisdiction; though willing and peaceful subjects to civil au-

*Religious Encyc.,*  
p. 188.

thority, where the rights of conscience are not involved. Hence, in every age, their strong attachment to liberty, especially to religious liberty; these principles they were the first to proclaim, and the first also to exemplify. Their principles have subjected them to persecution from age to age, and to such principles they have counted it a glory to be martyrs. Though their own blood has flown freely, they have never shed the blood of others. Indeed, civil persecution of any kind, on their principles, is impossible." Not only in this country, but throughout the world, Baptists have borne unflinching testimony to this doctrine of equality of privilege in the worship of God. In the advertisement to the Tracts on Liberty of Conscience, published by the Hanserd Knolly's Society, it is stated that: "In the prospectus of the Hanserd Knolly's Society, it was stated

*Tracts on Lib. of*  
*Con., p. 5.*



that ‘to the Baptists belong the honor of first asserting in this land, and of establishing on the immutable basis of just argument and Scripture rule, the right of every man to worship God as conscience dictates, in submission only to divine command.’ ” And, on the same subject, Elder J. R. Graves expresses himself in the standing column of his paper, as follows: “All standard historians unanimously affirm that the *government* of the apostolic churches was *purely democratic* (that is, vested in the people or membership), and *all the churches independent republics*. All *religious societies* have *legislative powers*, and *clerical* or *aristocratical* governments (that is, in the hands of the clergy or a few as a session,) are *anti-scriptural* and *anti-republican*—tyrannies which no Christian can lawfully countenance, or republican freeman ought to support,” etc.

Again: Mr. Graves, in the standing column of the Baptist, says: “That a body of immersed believers is the highest ecclesiastical authority in the world, and the only tribunal for the trial of cases of discipline; that the acts of a church are of superior binding force over those of an association, convention, council, or presbytery; and no association or convention can impose a moral obligation upon the constituent parts composing them.”

Mr. Orchard, the Baptist historian, says of the Baptists:

*His. Bapt., vol.  
II, p. 277.*

“They are a people very fond of religious liberty, and very unwilling to be brought under the bondage of the judgment of

any.” This fondness for religious liberty among Baptists has generally inclined them to favor a republican form of government in the state. Such was the force of Baptist influence brought to bear in the formation of the Ameri-





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



United States. They have conquered the aristocratic tendencies in Carolina and New York, the High Church in Virginia, the Theocracy in Massachusetts, and the Monarchy in all America. They have given laws to a continent, and, formidable through their moral influence, *they lie at the bottom of all the democratic movements which are now shaking the nations of Europe.*" Though Roger Williams was not fully a Baptist, he advocated the Baptist doctrine of "soul liberty," for which he was persecuted and banished from Massachusetts. As soon as he began to proclaim this doctrine, he was charged with the heresy of the Anabaptists. While it is true, as stated by Gervinus, that the principles of religious and civil liberty were established in Rhode Island "before they were taught in any of the schools of philosophy in Europe," it is also true that the Baptists of England had suffered, long prior to the time of Williams, for the advocacy of the same principles. It is an error into which some have fallen, who suppose that Williams was the first to advocate the doctrine of entire freedom of conscience in matters of religion. In this quotation we have the fact brought out that these Baptist principles "*have given laws to a continent,*" and are "*shaking the nations of Europe*" by their moral power. The love of religious and civil liberty induced the early Baptists of this country to side with Washington in the struggle for American independence. President Washington acknowledged the services of the Baptists in the time of the Revolution of *Seventy-six*; for, in answer to the letter of the "Virginia Baptists, congratulating him on his honors, he replied that the denomination 'Have been throughout America uniformly, and almost unanimously, the



firm friends of civil liberty, and the persevering promoters of the glorious Revolution.’” This is the testimony of the renowned George Washington, that the Baptists in the revolutionary struggle were on the side of liberty. And this has been true of Baptists in all ages. Up to the time of the achievement of American liberty, as the result of the Revolution, State religion was established in the most of the colonies except Rhode Island. Baptists were taxed, imprisoned, and whipped, because of their advocacy of religious liberty, in preaching contrary to the laws regulating religion. But, from the very first, they made determined efforts to secure full liberty to worship God according to the dictates of conscience. They did not merely ask this liberty for themselves, but they plead for perfect religious liberty to all. In the first Continental Congress, which was held in 1774, in Philadelphia, the Baptists sent their messengers to memorialize Congress by beseeching them to “secure at once the recognition of *the inalienable rights of conscience*.” And though nothing could then be accomplished, yet, at the Provincial Congress of Massachusetts, which met in the same year, the Baptists laid in their grievances through Isaac Backus; and they succeeded in securing the following resolution, as given by Mr. Curtis:

“IN PROVINCIAL CONGRESS, December 9, 1774.

“On reading the memorial of Rev. Isaac Backus, agent of the Baptist churches in this government,

*Progress Bapt.  
Prin., p. 55.*

“*Resolved*, That the establishment of civil and religious liberty to each denomination in the province, is the sincere wish of this Congress; but being, by no means, vested with powers of civil government, whereby they can redress the



grievances of any person whatever, they, therefore, recommend to the Baptist churches, that when a general assembly shall be convened in this colony, they lay the real grievances of said churches before the same; when and where their petition will most certainly meet with all that attention due to the memorial of a denomination of Christians so well disposed to the public weal of their country.

“By order of the Congress.

“JOHN HANCOCK, President.”

Accordingly, the Baptists memorialized the next session of the Massachusetts Legislature (1775). In doing so, they said: “Our real grievances are, that we, as well as our fathers, have, from time to time, been taxed, on religious accounts, where we were not represented, and our causes have been tried by interested judges. *For a civil Legislature to impose religious taxes, is, we conceive, a power which their constituents never had to give, and, therefore, going entirely out of their jurisdiction.* We are persuaded that an entire freedom from being taxed by civil rulers to religious worship, is not a mere favor from any man or men in the world, but a right and property granted us by God, who commands us to stand fast in it. We should wrong our consciences by allowing that power to men which we believe belongs only to God.”

Although but little was accomplished at this time, the Baptists continued to plead the cause of liberty of conscience before the various Legislatures and before Congress, until religious liberty was fully established throughout the United States. Members of other denominations have, more or less, advocated religious liberty since it became popular in this country; but when liberty of con-





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



the world, and had concluded that it would be the best plan of government for the American colonies. This was several years before the Declaration of Independence.” From this it appears that Mr. Jefferson, the framer of the Constitution, gathered his idea of “pure democracy” from a Baptist church. To my mind, it is evident that the doctrine of *religious liberty*, incorporated in the American Constitution and Government, is attributable, under God, to Baptist influence. It is no idle dream to announce, that Baptist principles have given liberty to a continent. Even when Baptists have had the opportunity of pecuniary support from the state, they have firmly rejected it as contrary to their fundamental principles of religious liberty. This is illustrated by the conduct of the Georgia Baptists,

*Religious Denom.*,  
p. 165. reported as follows: “In February, 1785, says a writer in the third volume of the

*Christian Review*, ‘A law for the establishment and support of religion, was passed in Georgia, through the influence of the Episcopalians. It embraced all denominations, and gave all equal privileges; but in May, the Baptists remonstrated against it—sent two messengers to the Legislature, and in the next session it was repealed. In both ministers and members, they were much more numerous than any other denomination. Their preachers might have occupied every neighborhood, and lived upon the public treasury; but, no; they knew that Christ’s kingdom is not of this world; and believed that any dependence on the civil power for its support, tends to corrupt the purity and pristine loveliness of religion. They, therefore, preferred to pine in poverty, as many of them did, and prevent an unholy marriage between the Church of Christ and the civil authority. The overthrow



of the above-named odious laws is to be attributed to their unremitting efforts; they generally struck the first blow, and thus inspired other sects with their own intrepidity. It is owing to their sentiments, chiefly, as the friends of religious liberty, that no law abridging the freedom of thought or opinion touching religious worship, is now in force to disgrace our statute books. It is not here asserted that, but for their efforts, a system of persecution, cruel and relentless as that of Mary of England, or Catharine de Medici of France, would have obtained in these United States; but is asserted that the Baptists have successfully propagated their sentiments on the subject of religious liberty, at the cost of suffering in property, in person, in limb, and in life. Let the sacrifice be ever so great, they have always freely made it, in testimony of their indignation against laws which would fetter the conscience. Their opposition to tyranny was implacable, and it mattered not whether the intention was to tax the people without representation, or to give to the civil magistrate authority to settle religious questions by the sword. In either case, it met in every Baptist an irreconcilable foe.' "

These expressions, quoted from the Religious Denominations, are but the sentiments of all true Baptists throughout the world. The ignorance of those who represent the Baptist church government as oppressive, or opposed to religious and civil freedom, is to be pitied. The Baptists stand alone in giving the liberty to every church member to act in the transaction of church duties. None has the right to assume the pre-eminence over his brethren. Contrasting the Baptist principles with others, Chevalier Bunsen remarks: "How little the Na- *Religious Denom.*, tional churches of the seventeenth cen- p. 190.



tury can make head against the onsets of the Baptists, in countries where a great and free religious movement exists, is evinced by the fact, that, among serious Christians of the English race in the United States, the Baptist or Congregational preachers are on the increase more than any other sect, so that they form already the most numerous and most progressive community." Full enough has been presented to show that the present Baptists possess this Bible peculiarity of religious *equality* in the churches of Jesus Christ.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



fectly competent to “*judge*” or decide who ought to approach the Lord’s table. They themselves are perfectly qualified to judge in this matter, but Baptists must not judge! It must not be forgotten that, while it is true that we are forbidden by the Savior to judge the hearts or motives of our brethren, we are authorized, by the same

*Matt. 7: 16.* Word of God, to “know them by their fruits,” and thus decide or judge who are church members. Indeed, we have the authority laid down by the apostle, by which we are required to judge with whom we should eat at the Lord’s table. Here is the author-

*1 Cor. 5: 11-13.* ity: “But now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner; with such a one *no not to eat*. For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? do not ye judge them that are within? But them that are without God judgeth. Therefore put away from among yourselves that wicked person.” Here is the authority of Heaven, to “judge them that are within” the church, or decide who are members of the church, and qualified for the Supper. But if the argument of our opponents is correct, that all must eat with us at the Lord’s table who think themselves worthy, then we must eat with all those classes of persons with whom the apostle has said, “*no not to eat*”! In fact, the very denominations who are so vociferous in their condemnation of the Baptists for deciding whom they think qualified to approach the Lord’s table, are guilty of the same thing; they all decide or “judge” whom they deem qualified to approach the table. And again: in



condemnation of themselves our opponents undertake to use the expression of the apostle against us where he says: “Let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.” Many persons quote this language in order to condemn the Baptist practice, when, at the same time, they are totally ignorant of the connection in which it stands, and the characters to whom it was addressed. Upon examination it will be found that this injunction was not given to the unbaptized, who were not church members; but to “the Church of God which is at Corinth.” This was instruction given to those who were actual members of a Gospel church, and not to them that are without, or members of some modern sect, set up by human ingenuity. This instruction, for church members to examine themselves, is the same that is given by every Baptist minister who administers the Lord’s Supper. They exhort every member of the church to examine himself in the light of the Word of God, with humble prayer and supplication to God, to enable him to partake of the elements with due solemnity, in memory of a dying Savior. The fault of some of these Corinthians was that: “In eating, every one taketh before other his own supper: and one is hungry, and another is drunken.” And when the apostle had sharply rebuked them for their want of reverence in partaking of the Supper, he then exhorted them—the actual church members—to *examine themselves*, and so eat of that bread and drink of that cup. The practice of our opponents, in the misapplication of this text, exhibits the grossness of the perversion of the truth to which they continually resort in order to bring reproach upon us.



*Second: A want of love.* Another objection urged by our opponents against our practice in communion, is, *that we exhibit a want of charity or love toward our brethren whom we admit to be pious persons.* The word charity has been pressed into service in order to give currency to all the errors which have inundated the world for the last fifteen centuries. But it is a truth, that though “charity shall cover a multitude of sins,” or faults, it “rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth.” We are taught by this, that our charity or love for men should not cause us to violate the truth of God; for if we love Jesus Christ, we must keep his commandments irrespective of the views, feelings, prejudices, or traditions of men.

*Baptists lack charity.*

1 *Peter* 4: 8.

1 *Cor.* 13: 6.

And if our *love* or charity for men should induce us to violate the laws of Jesus Christ, which would be the case were we to commune with those who are neither baptized nor members of the kingdom of Christ, it would be positive evidence that we are not worthy of him; for “he that loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me, is not worthy of me.” It appears that many persons who profess to be Christians, exhibit more anxiety to show love to their fellow-men than to Jesus Christ, by the faithful performance of his commandments. If necessary to follow Christ, we are commanded *to forsake our father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters; yea, and our own life also, or we can not be his disciples.* It is evident that we exhibit more love to our erring brethren by refusing to participate in their errors, than if we were to indorse their errors by

*Matt.* 10: 37.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



The Methodist Discipline says: "The Supper of the Lord is not only a sign of the love that Christians ought to have among themselves one to another, but rather is a sacrament of our redemption by Christ's death." Even if mixed communion were Scriptural, we could not consistently commune with the Methodists, from the fact, as shown by the Discipline, they have reduced it in part to a mere love-feast—a sign of love for one another.

*Discipline of 1859,* p. 28.

*Third:* How can we commune in heaven? But again the question is asked, with an air of triumph: "*If we can not commune together here on earth, how can we commune together in heaven?*"

*Com. in Heaven.*

And this is thought by some to be argument. But we answer, that the Lord's Supper is an institution belonging to the churches in the kingdom of Christ on earth, and it is only to be observed until Christ comes again; and, therefore, will not be observed in heaven at all by any one. Such an objection only betrays the extreme ignorance of him who makes it, in supposing that the Lord's Supper is to be perpetuated in heaven above. But if they mean spiritual communion, in this objection, we answer, that we now have such communion with all the people of God on earth.

And it is further urged that the Baptists exclude from their communion persons with whom they expect to live in heaven; therefore the Baptists must regard their communion as a holier place than heaven itself. I answer this objection by asking, Do not the Pedobaptists themselves expect to live in heaven with persons whom they exclude from their communion? They exclude infants and idiots, and yet they expect to live in heaven with them.



*Is the Pedobaptists' communion more holy than heaven?* Such frivolous objections lie with equal weight against those who make them as against Baptists. To illustrate the inconsistency of the Pedobaptist complaint against Baptists, we relate a circumstance which actually occurred. On a communion occasion, as the elder of a Presbyterian congregation was distributing the bread and wine, his own little boy, a "baptized" member of the church, came with tears, pleading with his father for the bread and wine, saying, "Give me some cake, give me some cider." Was not this "close" communion thus to reject one of the members of the church who had the sealing ordinance? Baptists commune, at least with all their own members in fellowship, and invite all others to come to the table on the same terms; but Pedobaptists are so *close* in communion that they will not commune with their own infant members. But will it be said that the infants can not understand the design of the Supper? They can certainly understand the communion as well as they understand baptism. The Greek Church is more consistent than other Pedobaptists; for they give the Supper to their infant members. They administer it to them from a spoon. But our "*close*" communion friends will feed the old sheep and let the little lambs of the flock go unfed.

---

SECTION II.—BAPTIST PECULIARITY SIXTH — RESTRICTED COMMUNION—TESTED BY THE BIBLE.

The question now comes up, Is the peculiar practice of Baptists in regard to the Lord's Supper, which has called down on them the scoffs and opposition of the world, supported by the authority of Inspiration? *First:* Upon the



examination of the Scriptures it will be found *that the Lord's Supper stands in point of order after baptism.*

All denominations which practice baptism at all, have, until recently, admitted this position; and it is still held, theoretically, by nearly all Christendom, that baptism precedes the sacred Supper; but of late, some, in order for popularity it would seem, have come to the conclusion that all classes, whether baptized or unbaptized, may, of right, approach the Lord's table. We have the example of the apostles in favor of our position; for they were all baptized before they partook of the Supper at the hands of Jesus Christ. This is not only shown from the fact that the apostles were John's disciples before they were called to preach by Jesus Christ, but it is proved, from the language of John himself, where he said: "I indeed baptize

*Matt. 3: 11.* you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire." This shows that the same characters who were baptized in the Holy Spirit, which was on the day of Pentecost, were previously baptized by John; the twelve apostles were baptized in the Holy Spirit on the day of Pentecost; therefore, they were previously baptized by John. And as John's ministry closed before the giving of the Supper, therefore it is absolutely certain that the first apostles were baptized by John before they participated with Christ of the Lord's Supper.

Again: That the apostles were baptized by John, is shown from the following: "And all the people, hearing it, and the publicans, justified God, having been immersed with John's immersion. But the Pharisees and the lawyers

*Luke 7: 29, 30;  
new version.*





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



*Acts* 2: 42. steadfastly in the apostle's doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers." Here the breaking of bread in the communion came after baptism. And those who would take the communion before baptism, violate the apostolic order of the proceedings on the day of Pentecost. The same is also taught in the commission, where the Savior said: "Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo! I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world." Under the commission, baptism was the first duty enjoined after the exercise of true faith; therefore no unbaptized person, according to the commission, can approach the Lord's table. It can not be shown that any person in the apostolic age ever dared to approach the Lord's table before and without baptism. Baptists do not regard anything except the immersion of a true believer as baptism at all; therefore Baptists can not commune with the members of those societies which practice another baptism. And more: baptism, to be valid, must be performed by the sanction or authority of a church of Jesus Christ acting as the executive in his kingdom; therefore Baptists can not consistently commune with those persons who have received immersion in those human societies which have been set up without the sanction of Heaven. And again: the order of the witnesses which bear testimony on earth, is laid down as follows: "And there are three that bear witness in earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one." How unmistakable the order of Heaven. The Holy Spirit *first*

*Matt.* 28: 19, 20.

*1 John* 5: 8.



bears witness with our spirits that we are the children of God by faith in the risen Savior; *second*, the water, or burial in baptism, testifies that we are dead to sin, or freed from it; and our rising out of the water shows our faith in a risen Savior, and is a pledge of our future resurrection from the dead. The blood, the *third* witness, is the emblematic blood of the Supper, and testifies of the death of Christ by the shedding of his blood for the remission of sins. These three witnesses bear testimony on earth, in perfect agreement, in the order of *Spirit, water and blood*; and as the water of baptism bears testimony after the witness of the Spirit, so the *emblematic blood* in the Supper bears testimony after the witness of the water in baptism. He who would willfully invert the order of these witnesses, abolish or change their testimony, must be considered as exercising the authority of Antichrist. The Baptists are the only people on earth whose practice coincides with the testimony of these three witnesses. It is now fully made out that, in the apostolic age, Baptism always preceded the Lord's Supper.

*Second: Jesus Christ was baptized before he participated with his disciples in the Supper.* This is not denied by any one, because the baptism of Jesus took place before he entered his public ministry, and the giving of the Supper occurred the night before his crucifixion. Those who presume to approach the Lord's table before they have been buried in baptism, claim a privilege neither taken nor granted by Jesus Christ. The Savior says that: "It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord;" but *Matt. 10: 25.* those who approach the table without baptism have usurped a privilege above their Lord and Master. The example



of Jesus Christ extends still further: when he instituted this Supper, he entered alone with his disciples into a “large upper room,” where he distributed the elements, and said, “This do in remembrance of me.” So, then, the most restricted, and, as some would say, the “closest” communion that ever was held on earth, was administered by the Savior to his disciples. And were the same Savior to return to the earth, in the form of a servant, like he was then, with his same disciples in this our day, and repeat the same communion as at the first, these same people, who boast so much of charity, would stigmatize them as “close communion Baptists.” So, then, when Baptists are reproached for their practice, they should consider it an honor to bear reproach for Christ’s sake.

Jesus Christ was despised and rejected of men, and so are Baptists, on account of following the example of Jesus Christ.

*Third: The Lord’s Supper was fixed by himself in his kingdom.* He said, while at the table at the time of the institution of the Supper: “I appoint unto you a kingdom as my father hath appointed unto me; that ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.” It has already been shown that Jesus Christ set up his own kingdom with visible subjects, laws, and ordinances. And here we are informed that the disciples must *eat and drink at his table in his kingdom. Yes; the Lord’s table is fixed by the fiat of Heaven in his kingdom.* We boldly affirm that the tables spread in any other church or kingdom are not the Lord’s tables, whatever may be the forms and solemn ceremonies attached to them





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



of the authority which alone belongs to Jesus Christ. Those who find fault on account of the communion being restricted to the kingdom, are finding fault with Jesus Christ. Notwithstanding the Lord's Supper is restricted to the kingdom of Christ, yet all the children of God are invited to participate at the Lord's table in the kingdom. They should not be invited to approach that table in the neglect or contempt for the laws of Jesus Christ. Every one must get into the house, or kingdom, before he approaches the table which is fixed in the kingdom. When we invite our neighbors to eat at our tables of the things necessary for the body, we invite them on the same terms with every member of the family. It would be very unkind in one, after refusing such an offer, to narrate throughout the neighborhood that his neighbor would not let him eat at his table! Such is the practice of those who talk so much about "charity." I repeat, that the Baptists invite all the children of God to commune at the Lord's table upon the same terms that they themselves approach that table; and if they refuse to come, it is because their own doctrines or traditions stand as a barrier to keep them away. We invite them first into the house with us, and then to the table of the Lord, upon the terms laid down by the Master of the house, to which all must submit in coming to the table.

*Fourth: To commune indiscriminately with all the sects, would be the indorsement of their doctrines of church organization.* It is taught by nearly all the professing world, that the Lord's Supper is an institution belonging solely to the churches of Christ. Therefore, when we receive the members from the various human societies to the Supper, we say, by that act, that he is a church member; and if so,



his baptism is valid, though received in infancy, or in order to the pardon of sins. So, if we should commune with those human societies, then we would be liable to the charge of bidding god-speed to all the monstrous absurdities of the so-called Christian world. But we are warned against these traditions of men by the Savior, in the following language: "In vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men." And Paul warns us against these traditions, as follows: "Touch not; taste not; handle not; which all are to perish with the using; after the commandments and doctrines of men: which things have indeed a show of wisdom in will worship, and humility, and neglecting of the body; not in any honor to the satisfying of the flesh." But those who commune with the societies that hold these traditions and commandments of men, have not only *touched, tasted, or handled* them, but they have publicly indorsed them by indorsing the church which holds them. But does John recommend this mixed fellowship and communion? No; for he said: "If there come any to you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house; neither bid him god-speed. For he that biddeth him god-speed, is partaker of his evil deeds." John says, "*receive him not*," but the popular communion-ist says, "*receive him*"!

Mark 7: 7.

Col. 2: 21-23.

2 John, 10-14.

To illustrate the folly of this popular communion system, I will here relate an occurrence which took place in my own labors several years ago: I called at the dwelling of Mr. P., a prominent Universalist; and he immediately introduced the claims of Universalism and advocated them with enthusiasm. He was, however, ignorant of my



denominational locality; and he supposed that I was a Methodist. And when he felt that his foundation was being swept away before the Bible truth, he exclaimed: "The Methodists admit that the Universalists are an orthodox church by communing with them." I replied: "I am not a Methodist; neither am I responsible for their inconsistencies." He then exclaimed: "The Presbyterians will commune with us." I replied: "I am not a Presbyterian." He then, in his excitement, exclaimed: "The Baptists —;" I remarked, interrupting him, "don't say Baptists." He then, in the extremity of his confusion, said: "The Baptists are a bigoted, narrow-hearted set, any how." I remarked that "The Baptists have too much consistency to indorse such an abominable doctrine as *Universalism* by communing with its members."

Had I been in the place of the popular communionist, I should have been puzzled for an answer. We could mention cases where Universalists have taken the Supper with the *open* communionists at their popular tables. Do not the open communionists bid god-speed to Universalism? And, according to this *open* theory, a Roman Catholic, Mormon, Shaking-Quaker, or Infidel, may approach the sacred Supper provided he thinks himself worthy! It is evident to every thinking mind, that, to invite the members of the different sects to the communion, is to indorse their church organization and doctrines, whatever they may be. How, then, could any Baptist recognize the sprinkling of infants as baptism, by communing with those who practice it? In exhibiting the inconsistency of Robert

*H's. Open Com.,  
by Waller, p. 33.*

Hall, in advocating open communion, the lamented John L. Waller said that: "Mr. Hall had surely forgotten the history of





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



ler, that: “A free-communion Baptist is, in spirit and feeling, no Baptist at all. He not only dis-  
*Open Com.*, p. 45. cards whatever makes us Baptists, but he can not get along without misrepresenting our system, and making it palpable to every one that he cherishes for us a feeling of contempt, and loves all others better than those whose name he bears, and to whose association he affects to belong.”

We have now had ample proof from the Bible that this peculiarity of the Baptist practice concerning communion is supported by the Word of God and the practice of the apostolic age. The great advocate of open communion, Robert Hall himself, said that: “The apostles, it is acknowledged, admitted none to the Lord’s Supper but such as were previously baptized.” This being so, how dare any one violate the example of the inspired apostles?

### SECTION III.—CONCESSIONS TO BAPTIST VIEWS OF COMMUNION.

*First:* “Neander, in his great Church History, speaking of the Lord’s Supper, in the early ages of Christianity, says: ‘At this celebration, as may easily  
*Quoted by Waller,* be concluded, no one could be present  
*Open Com.*, p. 20. who was not a member of the Christian Church, and incorporated into it by the rite of baptism.’ ”

*Second:* The learned Dr. Dwight, a congregationalist, and president of Yale College, remarks that: “*It is an indispensable qualification for this ordinance, that the candidate for communion be a member of the visible Church of*  
*Dwight’s Theology,* vol. IV, p. 365.



*Christ in full standing.* By this I intend, that he shall be such a member of the church as I have formerly described—to wit: *that he should be a person of piety; that he should have made a public profession of religion, and that he should have been baptized.*”

*Third:* Waller says: “The late Dr. Griffin, formerly president of Williams College, Mass., and one of the most talented and erudite of the congregational clergy of New England, in his celebrated letter on communion, says: ‘I agree with the advocates of close communion on two things: 1. That baptism is an initiating ordinance, which introduces into the visible church. Of course, where there is no baptism there are no visible churches. 2. That we ought not to commune with those who are not baptized, and, of course, are not church members, even if we regard them as Christians. Should a pious Quaker so far depart from his principles as to wish to commune with me at the Lord’s table, while he yet refused to be baptized, I could not receive him, because there is such a relation established between the two ordinances that I have no right to separate them; or, in other words, I have no right to send the sacred elements out of the church.’” *Open Com., p. 86.*

*Fourth:* Again, Waller says: “The *Baltimore Christian Advocate*, an organ of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, holds the following language: ‘That a good man may be a firm believer in the necessity of adult immersion, we do not, for a moment, doubt; and that they who believe this, should decline communion with the unbaptized, is reasonable and consistent. To be offended with the refusal of these to



commune with us, is absurd; to reproach them for it, unkind and unjustifiable.' ”

*Fifth:* Again, Mr. Waller says that: “The *Boston Recorder*, Congregationalist, in a late issue, *Open Com.*, p. 86. says: ‘If we receive people to the communion without baptism, we shall practically treat baptism as a nullity, and contribute to its being wholly abandoned.’ ”

*Sixth:* Dr. Beecher says: “If our Baptist brethren are right on the mode and subjects of baptism, they are right on the question of communion.”  
*Quoted by Waller, Open Com.*, p. 87.

*Seventh:* The Rev. E. G. Hibbard, of the Genesee Conference, in his work on baptism, published by the Methodist Conference, said: “The question on the mode of baptism borrows all its importance from the question: ‘Is Christian baptism itself essentially prerequisite to a Scriptural participation of the Lord’s Supper?’ This latter topic has been treated adjunctively with the question of the mode, and lends to it an unspeakable interest. Divines have not entered the polemic arena to show their skill and tact at debate. The long and painful controversy on the subject of the mode of Christian baptism, has not been merely a display of intellectual parts. The Corinthians are justly censurable for wasting time and intellectual power, and brotherly charity, in a controversy concerning ‘meats and drinks, and new moons, and holy days;’ the schoolmen have exhibited themselves to the ridicule of all succeeding generations, for their fruitless and eternal disputations on such points as, whether there is any possible distinction between essence and existence; whether an angel, or pure





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



dobaptist churches agree. They both agree in rejecting from communion at the table of the Lord, and in denying the rights of church-fellowship to, all who have not been baptized. Valid baptism they consider as essential to constitute visible church membership. This also we hold. The only question, then, that here divides us, is, ‘What is essential to valid baptism?’ The Baptists, in passing the sweeping sentence of disfranchisement upon all other Christian churches, have only acted upon a principle held in common with all other Christian churches—viz: that baptism is essential to church membership.”

“They have denied our baptism, and, as unbaptized persons, we have been excluded from their  
*Hibbard on Bapt.,* table. That they err, greatly in their  
 p. 174. views of Christian baptism, we, of course, believe. But, according to their views of baptism, they certainly are consistent in restricting thus their communion. We would not be understood as passing a judgment of approval upon their course; but we say their views of baptism force them upon the ground of strict communion, and herein they act upon the same principles as other churches—*i. e.*, they admit only those whom they deem baptized persons to the communion table. Of course, they must be their own judges as to what baptism is. It is evident that, according to our views of baptism, we can admit them to our communion; but with their views of baptism, it is equally evident, they can never reciprocate the courtesy. And the charge of *close communion* is no more applicable to the Baptists than to us, inasmuch as the question of church-fellowship with them is determined by as liberal principles as it is with any other Protestant churches, so far, I mean, as the present subject is con-



cerned—*i. e.*, it is determined by valid baptism. Now, this being the case, does it not become a measure of responsible moment to decide upon the question of the mode of baptism? Indeed, so awful are the aspects of this subject, that thousands have feared to assume a decided position in reference to it. They have held to exclusive immersion, and at the same time have held to catholic communion, or communion with persons who have not been immersed—an anomaly and absurdity that presents a singular contrast to the characteristic symmetry of Christian theology.”

I have introduced this long quotation from Mr. Hibbard on account of the strength of his argument in showing the utter folly of holding to immersion as the only baptism, and at the same time practicing mixed communion. Hibbard justly says that the Baptist “*views of baptism force them upon the ground of strict communion;*” “AND THE CHARGE OF CLOSE COMMUNION IS NO MORE APPLICABLE TO THE BAPTISTS THAN TO US.” If all Pedobaptist writers and speakers would thus admit the consistency of Baptist practice in communion, though they may think us in error, it would be much better for themselves, as well as for us. In showing the inconsistency of the open communion Baptists, the same writer says: “But it is far less responsible, in our estimation, to hold that baptism may be administered by sprinkling or pouring, than to hold fellowship at the Lord’s table with persons we do not believe have received Christian baptism.”

*Hibbard on Bapt.,*  
p. 175.

*Eighth:* Dr. Wall, the Vicar of Shoreham, the learned Episcopalian, in his history of infant baptism, says: “Among all the absurdities that ever were held, none ever



*His. Inf. Bapt.*, maintained, that any person should partake  
p. 786. of the communion before he was baptized.”

*Ninth*: Drs. Coke and Asbury, the founders of Methodist Episcopacy, in their notes on the Discipline of the Methodist Church, say: “We must also observe, that our  
*History of Discip.*, elders should be very cautious how they  
p. 377. admit to the communion persons who are

not in our society. It would be highly injurious to *our brethren* if we suffered any to partake of the Lord’s Supper with them whom we would not readily admit into our society on application made to us. Those whom we judge unfit to partake of our profitable, *prudential* means of grace, we should most certainly think improper to be partakers of an ordinance which has been expressly instituted by Christ himself.”

*Tenth*: Again, Bishop Hedding, on the administration of the Discipline of the Methodists, asks: “Is it proper for a preacher to give out a general invitation in the congregation to ‘members in good standing in other churches’ to come to the Lord’s Supper? No; for the most unworthy persons are apt to think themselves in good standing. And sometimes persons who are not members of any church will take the liberty, from such an invitation, to come. And again, there are some communities, called churches, which, from heretical doctrines or immoral practices, have no claim to the privileges of Christians, and ought not to be admitted to the communion of any Christian people. The rule in that case is as follows, and it ought to be strictly adhered to: ‘Let no person who is not a member of our church be admitted to the communion without examination, and some token given, by an elder or deacon. No person shall be admitted to the Lord’s





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



to enter the kingdom and approach the Lord's table scripturally, these Pedobaptist preachers refuse to take to their Supper the most innocent of all their membership,—I mean the babies whom they have kidnapped, sentenced, and condemned to Methodism, by forcing them into the “Methodist Church” by sprinkling or pouring! Will they say that an infant Methodist is too young to understand the design of the Supper? If so, he is too young to understand the design of baptism and church membership. The Greek Church is more consistent than the modern Pedobaptist sects; for they extend the Supper to every baptized infant, though his age may be only eleven days. What would be thought of my consistency were I to make a feast and sound a trumpet to proclaim my charity, and invite strangers to my supper; but after all, it turns out that I have debarred my own children—a part of my own family—from the feast? It would be thought that my ado about my superior charity was only for popular effect. I am fully satisfied that *open communion* originated in the desire for popularity. Its object is to please men, not God. The *Modern Reformers* hold strict communion in theory, but *loose communion* in practice. Their leaders know that strict communion is Scriptural, but their desire for popularity is so strong that they practice open communion. Mr. Campbell, their founder and leader, has repeatedly expressed himself in opposition to open communion. I here introduce one statement from him, as follows: “We do not

*Mill. Harb., vol. II, p. 393.* recollect that we have ever argued out the merits of this ‘free and open communion system.’ But one remark we must offer in passing, that we must regard it as one of the weakest and most vulnerable causes ever plead; and that the ‘great’



Mr. Hall, as he is called, has, in his defense of the practice, made it appear worse than before. In attempting to make it reasonable, he has only proved how unreasonable and unscriptural it is." And yet, in the face of this strong condemnation of Mr. Campbell, his *disciples* practice this "unreasonable and unscriptural" open communion system. These modern disciples are more inconsistent than any other "open" communion society on earth. The Pedobaptist open communionists hold the branch church system,—and they only propose to commune with those whom they regard as church members, or at least, Christians,—but *Reformers* wish to commune with those whom they regard as members of Antichrist and children of the devil. These people who profess to have escaped from the corruptions and smoke of Babylon, will seek the opportunity to commune with Baptists and others whom they regard as a part of Babylon and Antichrist! They complain if they are not permitted to commune with the Antichristian sects. When they do this, do they not return to "their wallowing in the mire"? They either do not believe what they say of others, or they are guilty of willfull idolatry in symbolizing with Antichrist. Which horn of this dilemma will they choose? Elder J. L. Waller sets forth the utter absurdity of communion with this sect, as follows: "The Reformers do not regard the Baptists as members of the Church of Christ. They proclaim us to be schismatics or sectarians. They affirm that we have built upon another foundation than the sacred Scriptures—that we are one of the daughters of mystical Babylon. Hence, their chief work has been to reform us and to construct us into a veritable church. They call upon us to forsake our evil

*Open Com., p. 76.*



ways, and to follow them in the paths which they honor with their footprints. And whenever they can get a Baptist to join them, they rejoice more over him than over ninety and nine wicked persons who need repentance.

If they regard ours as churches of God, then they are guilty of egregious wrong in producing schism in the body of Christ, which they every-where attempt, and which, in many cases, they have but too successfully accomplished; and if they do not regard ours as churches of God, then they can not, according to that Bible which they profess so dearly to reverence, wish sacramental communion with us. According to the first supposition, they are too sinful for our fellowship; and according to the last, we are too sinful for theirs. Either way, and intercommunion is wholly out of the question,—it is but the communion of light and darkness.”

Yet, in the face of all these facts, the modern *Reformers* are guilty of the very absurdity which involves them in hypocrisy and guilt in the sight of God. Mr. Waller shows the utter folly of Baptists, when they commune with Campbellites, in the following words: “In many of

*Wal. Open Com.,*  
pp. 76, 77.

the reformed ‘congregations,’ too, are persons who have been excluded from Baptist churches for sundry misdemeanors and immoralities, and yet have been taken into the brotherhood of the Reformation without any regard to our feelings or discipline in the premises. This, our readers will bear witness, is no mere fancy supposition to serve a purpose. Such examples, unfortunately, exist too abundantly. Do not Baptists, then, in fellowshiping such at the Lord’s table, and as true church members, proclaim, to all intents and purposes, their own want of ecclesiastical existence—





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



mixed fellowship, mixed worship, and mixed marriages, with the surrounding nations. And it was the settled policy of the enemies of Israel, when they failed to subdue them by force, to try to seduce<sup>'</sup> them to commune with them in their worship. And, in like manner, when the various opposing parties of earth have failed to overthrow the Baptists by fire and sword, they now, in order to get us to surrender our principles, cry “charity,” and propose to *commune with us*. When Sanballat and Tobiah failed to hinder the rebuilding of Jerusalem *by force*, they then sent messengers to persuade Nehemiah to come down from his work, and meet them in council, in some of the villages of Ono: but they thought to do him mischief. And so our ecclesiastical enemies, who have failed to check the progress of the Baptist denomination by physical force, have now changed their policy, and wish to *commune with them*! It comes with an ill grace from the members of those denominations whose skirts are all stained with Baptist blood, to propose now, as they have no power to persecute with the sword, to commune with the Baptists.

We have now seen that the peculiar practice of the Baptists in regard to the Lord's Supper, is not only sustained by the Word of God and the practice of the first churches, but it is admitted to be consistent by the wisest men of other denominations.

---

#### SECTION IV.—PECULIARITY SIXTH—RESTRICTED COMMUNION—IDENTIFIED AMONG MODERN BAPTISTS.

It is wholly unnecessary to array many proofs on this point. The standing charge of “close communion” is enough to settle the point, that Baptists are strict in their



terms of communion. Because of this peculiar feature in Baptist practice, they are called “ uncharitable,” “ selfish,” “ bigoted,” and “ narrow-hearted,” with many other ugly names of reproach. It would seem that our opponents suppose that they have a perfect right to fix any terms of communion which they may deem proper. They have overlooked the fact, that Jesus Christ has fixed the terms of approach to the table, and we have no more right to change his order than we have to establish infant baptism, or any other Popish ceremony. The complaint ought not, therefore, to be made against Baptists, but against him who made the terms “ narrow.” In fact, the reproach of what the world calls “ close communion ” falls upon him who said, “ Straight is the gate and narrow is the way that leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.” Baptists are called to suffer reproach for the sake of Jesus Christ ; for it has already been abundantly proved that the Savior instituted the Supper as held by the Baptists. Restricted communion is practiced by about *fifteen thousand* Baptist churches in America ; and the Baptist pulpit and press advocate the same divinely instituted order. Strict communion is distinctly stated in the various expressions of faith published by Baptists. Quite a number of books and tracts have been written in defense of the Bible order of the Supper. Brethren Kiffin, Booth, Fuller, and Orchard in England, and in America nearly all our writers, have wielded their pens against “ open communion.” Amidst the multitude of writers in America on the communion question, we mention the names, Curtis, Howell, Waller, and Gardner, who have produced books in defense of restricted communion. The “ Church Communion,” by the last-named author, is a newly-pub-



lished work of great value. It is conceded that some persons called Baptists have adopted the popular system of *open communion*; but, by the admission of nearly all, they are inconsistent with their own professions, and they stultify themselves by the indorsement of the things which they do not believe. Professor Curtis affirms, truly, that:

*Prog. Bapt. Prin.,* “The principle upon which mixed com-  
p. 296. munion rests, *involves a breach of trust*;

because baptism and the Lord’s Supper are committed to the custody and guardianship of the visible churches of Christ, as such, which are the trustees, the administrators of these ordinances, by divine appointment.” We are commanded to *mark them which cause divisions contrary to the doctrine of Christ, and “avoid them;*” but our open-communion brethren would say, “commune with them”! The views of Baptists are expressed in the twenty-second article of the Confession of Faith, published by Joseph Belcher in the Religious Denominations. This article expresses the Baptist doctrine

*Religious Denom.,* of communion as follows: “The Supper  
p. 203. of the Lord Jesus was instituted by him

the same night wherein he was betrayed, to be observed in his churches unto the end of the world, for the perpetual remembrance, and showing forth the sacrifice of himself in his death.”

As the communion is held by nearly all to be a *church ordinance*, therefore none except *church members* can approach it without the violation of the order of the Lord’s house. It is easy to see, that when we commune with all denominations, we admit the church character and claims of all denominations; and we thereby indorse the ordinances and superstitions of all these societies. Baptists





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



## CHAPTER XIV.

## PECULIARITY SEVENTH.—THE TRUE CHURCH PERSECUTED.

1. BAPTIST PECULIARITY SEVENTH — THE TRUE CHURCH PERSECUTED—TESTED BY THE BIBLE.
2. PECULIARITY SEVENTH IDENTIFIED IN MODERN BAPTIST HISTORY.

## SECTION I.—BAPTIST PECULIARITY SEVENTH — THE TRUE CHURCH PERSECUTED — TESTED BY THE BIBLE.

The Lord Jesus Christ, the Head of the Church, was sorely persecuted. His enemies sent men to try to entangle him in his teaching; they assailed his character with foul slanders; and at last they put him to the shameful death of the cross. The Savior was sorely persecuted and maltreated while on earth, and he has made no promise that his disciples should fare better than himself in this respect; but, on the contrary, they are promised persecutions as a part of their inheritance. Jesus said to Peter:

*Mark 10: 29, 30.* “Verily I say unto you, There is no man

that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the Gospel’s, but he shall receive an hundred-fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with *persecutions*; and in the world to come eternal life.” How emphatic, every one “*shall receive*” “*persecutions*” as a part of his present inheritance. Again: Jesus taught that we must not expect



exemption from persecution, when he said: "It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord: if they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?" Some Christians suppose that they are to live in peace and quiet on earth; but Jesus said: "Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. And a man's foes shall be they of his own household." The Savior does not teach that the faithful preaching of the Gospel will itself produce war; but he would inform us that the wickedness of the human family is so great that they will rise in rebellion against the Gospel faithfully preached, and persecute those who forsake all for the kingdom of God, even to the rending asunder the dearest ties on earth. Jesus said: "I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I, if it be already kindled?" In this the Savior taught that the persecutions against himself were but the kindling of a *fire* on earth which would rend families and friends asunder. We are further informed that this fire of persecution will burn so fiercely that near relatives will deliver each other to death; for Jesus says: "Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. But beware of men; for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues; and ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them

*Matt.* 10: 25.

*Matt.* 10: 34-36.

*Luke* 12: 49.

*Matt.* 10: 16-22.



and the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak ; for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you. And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child : and the children shall rise up against *their* parents and cause them to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all *men* for my name's sake : but he that endureth to the end shall be saved."

Daniel the prophet foresaw the fearful persecutions waged against the saints of God by the Papal horn ; he *Dan. 7: 21.* said : " I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them." The crucifixion of Jesus was the result of religious hate manifesting itself in a fiendish persecution which even followed his dead body into the tomb. Stephen fell a martyr by the hand of relentless persecution, under the shower of stones. And the apostles, all except John, died a violent death, because of their faithful testimony for the truth.

But we are not to become discouraged under persecution, as if some strange thing had happened ; for all these afflictions, which are but for a moment, " work- *2 Cor. 4: 17.* eth for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory." Peter says : " Beloved, think it not *1 Peter 4: 12, 13.* strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you : But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings ; that, when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy." Jesus consoled the disciples as follows : *Matt. 5: 10-12.* " Blessed are they which are persecuted for





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



we discover that those ministers and members, professed Christians, who enjoy the popular favor or friendship of the world, are the enemies of God; and consequently they are also the enemies of all the faithful Christians who bear witness against the rulers of the darkness of this world and spiritual wickedness in high places. And it is also true, that these "Christians," enemies of God, who have transformed themselves into ministers of Christ, are the leaders in persecuting those who are faithful to Christ. Paul

*2 Tim. 3: 12.* said to Timothy: "Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution." There is no escape; all the truly godly shall suffer persecution; and when they reach heaven it will be

*Rev. 7: 14.* said of them: "These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb." And of these bitter persecutions or tribulations,

*Mark 13: 12, 13.* the Savior further said: "Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son; and children shall rise up against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake; but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved." Luke

reports the words of Jesus on this point thus: "But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my name's sake." In the fulfillment

of this prediction the apostle Paul was sorely persecuted. Tertullus, the orator employed by the high priest and elders to prosecute Paul before Felix, the governor, accused him as follows: "For we have found this man a pes-



silent fellow, and a mover of sedition among  
 all the Jews throughout the world, and a Acts 24: 5.  
 ringleader of the sect of the Nazarenes.” Again, the  
 apostle speaks of the persecutions and sufferings of the  
 apostolic ministry in the following: “Even unto this pres-  
 ent hour we both hunger, and thirst, and 1 Cor. 4: 11, 13.  
 are naked, and are buffeted, and have no  
 certain dwelling-place; and labor, working with our own  
 hands: being reviled, we bless; being persecuted, we  
 suffer it; being defamed, we entreat: we are made as the  
 filth of the world, and are the offscouring of all things unto  
 this day.” It can nowhere be found that true Christians  
 will be popular with the world. No point can be more  
 fully sustained by the Scriptures than that *the true church*  
*or kingdom of Jesus Christ was peculiarly persecuted, and*  
*every-where spoken against in the apostolic age.* This was  
 acknowledged by the Jews at Rome, in the following:  
 “But we desire to hear of thee what thou Acts 28: 22.  
 thinkest: for as concerning this sect, we  
 know that every-where it is spoken against.”

---

## SECTION II.—THE BIBLE CHARACTERISTIC OF THE TRUE CHURCHES OF CHRIST BEING PECULIARLY PERSECUTED, IDENTIFIED IN THE MODERN HISTORY OF BAPTISTS.

While other denominations dispute among themselves,  
 they unite in opposing the Baptists. The Baptists are the  
 objects of derision and persecution among both Catholics  
 and Protestants. They are accounted as the common  
 enemy of sects, creeds and formularies of the whole Cath-  
 olic and Protestant world. They are also looked upon



with suspicion and contempt by the kings and tyrants of earth as the enemies of all governments. Of this opposition to Baptists, Mosheim, the historian, says: "There

*Mos. Ch. History,* were certain sects and doctors against whom the zeal, vigilance and severity of  
p. 505.

Catholics, Lutherans, and Calvinists, were united, and in opposing whose settlement and progress these three communions, forgetting their dissensions, joined their most vigorous counsels and endeavors. The objects of their common aversion were the Anabaptists, and those who denied the divinity of Christ and a trinity of persons in the godhead." Catholics and Protestants still agree in that opposition to Baptists.

These persecutions against Baptists have not been confined to the Old World; but the relentless hand of violence has followed them to America; and on this continent Baptists have been banished, fined, imprisoned, and publicly whipped, on the account of their principles. A law was passed in the colony of Massachusetts in 1644, for the banishment of Baptists for the rejection of infant bap-

*Religious Denom.,* tism. "And in 1644, a poor man, by the name of Painter, became a Baptist, and  
p. 154.

was complained of to the court for refusing to have his child baptized. The court, with judicial dignity, interposed their authority in favor of the child. And because the poor man gave it as his opinion that infant baptism was an anti-christian ordinance, 'he was,' says Backus, 'tied up and whipped.' " And in the year 1651, three Baptist ministers, Dr. John Clarke, Obediah Holmes, and John Crandal, were arrested on Lord's Day, July 19th, while Clarke was preaching in a private house, and the next day were committed to prison in Boston.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



to any parish until a Presbyterian meeting-house should be built, and a Presbyterian minister settle there; in consequence of which the Baptists have never been freed from the first and great expenses of their parishes—expenses equal to the current expenses of ten or twelve years. This is the present case of the people of Ashfield, which is a Baptist settlement. There were but five families of other denominations in the place when the Baptist church was constituted; but those five, and a few more, have lately built a Presbyterian meeting-house there, and settled an orthodox minister, as they call him; which last cost them £200. To pay for both, they laid a tax on the land; and, as the Baptists are the most numerous, the greatest part fell to their share. The Presbyterians, in April last, demanded the money. The Baptists pleaded poverty, alleging that they had been twice driven from their plantations by the Indians' last war; that they were but new settlers, and had cleared out a few spots of land, and had not been able to build commodious dwelling-houses. Their tyrants would not hear. Then the Baptists pleaded the ingratitude of such conduct; for they had built a fort there at their own expense, and had maintained it for two years, and so had protected the interior Presbyterians, as well as their neighbors, who now rose up against them; that the Baptists to the westward had raised money to relieve Presbyterians who had, like them, suffered by the Indians; and that it was cruel to take from them what the Indians had left! But nothing touched the hearts of these cruel people. Then the Baptists urged the law of the province; but were soon told that that law extended to no new parish till the meeting-house and minister were paid for. Then the Baptists



petitioned the general court. Proceedings were stopped till further orders, and the poor people went home rejoicing, thinking their property safe; but they had not all got home before said order came; and it was an order for the Presbyterians to proceed. Accordingly, in the month of April, they fell foul on their plantations; and not on skirts and corners, but on the cleared and improved spots; and so have mangled their estates and left them hardly any but a wilderness. They sold the house and garden of one man, and the young orchards, meadows, and cornfields of others; nay, they sold their dead, for they sold their graveyards. The orthodox minister was one of the purchasers. These spots amounted to three hundred and ninety-five acres, and have since been valued at £363 8s., but were sold for £35 10s. This was the first payment. Two more are coming, which will not leave them an inch of land at this rate. The Baptists waited on the assembly five times this year for relief, but were not heard, under pretense they did no business; but their enemies were heard, and had their business done. At last the Baptists got together about a score of the members at Cambridge, and made their complaints known; but, in general, they were treated very superciliously. One of them spoke to this effect: *'The general assembly have a right to do what they did, and if you don't like it, you may quit the place!'* But, alas, they must leave their all behind! These Presbyterians are not only supercilious in power, but mean and cruel in mastery. When they came together to mangle the estates of the Baptists, they diverted themselves with the tears and lamentations of the oppressed. One of them, whose name is Wells, stood up to preach a mock sermon on the occasion; and among other



things, used words to this effect: ‘*The Baptists, for refusing to pay an orthodox minister, shall be cut in pound picces, and boiled for their fat to grease the devil’s carriage, etc.*’ ”

There can be no more reliable historical document than that published by an association of Baptists. This letter shows that the Baptists of Ashfield, Massachusetts, had their property sold by the Puritan Presbyterians, to pay for the building of the Presbyterian meeting-house and the salary of the Presbyterian minister; and when driven out of their possessions into the wilderness, a blasphemous mock-sermon was preached to aggravate their distress. But the Baptists were not only persecuted in Massachusetts with fines and imprisonments; they also suffered the same in Virginia and

other States. As many as “thirty Baptist ministers” were imprisoned in Virginia  
*Backus’ Ch. His.,*  
 p. 232.

“for preaching the Gospel to precious souls;” and besides the imprisonment, they suffered nearly all kinds of abuse and insults from their enemies. Among these, we mention the names of James Ireland and John Weatherford. Ireland was seized by the throat, by the officers of the Established Church, while engaged in prayer in the congregation; and they immediately hurried him

away to jail in Culpepper. “He was accompanied to prison amid the abuses of his persecutors; and while incarcerated in his  
*Virginia Baptist,*  
*Minister, p. 121.*

cell, not only suffered by the extreme inclemency of the weather, but by the personal maltreatment of his foes. They attempted to blow him up with gunpowder, but the quantity obtained was only sufficient to force up some of the flooring of his prison.” They attempted to destroy his life by suffocation, from burning brimstone, but failed.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



a sheriff arrested him, upon a *warrant* to commit him to Windham jail. His offense was as follows: ‘The said

*Religious Denom.,* Shubael Dimock has been convicted of  
p. 158. preaching in a school-house in Mansfield,  
and under an oak tree in Ashford.’ He

was required to walk before the officer to prison. But he replied, ‘I have no call there; neither can I voluntarily go, since I have said, God willing, I will preach this evening in Ashford under the oak tree.’ The officer urged that it was his duty to commit him to jail. ‘Well, then,’ said the prisoner, ‘If you have a duty to perform, you must attend to it; I shall not resist.’ He was at length set upon a horse and directed to guide it to Windham. Even this he refused to do, and the sheriff was compelled to mount the horse behind, and with his arms around him to guide the horse to the prison. Here he lay confined nine months, still proclaiming the truth as he had opportunity, for he declared that it was impossible to prevent his preaching unless they cut out his tongue.” Of such imprisonments and persecutions, “Many instances might be

*Religious Denom.,* given: such as that on June 4, 1768, John  
p. 160. Walker, Lewis Craig, James Childs, and

others were dragged before the magistrates in Spottsylvania county, and bound over for trial. Three days after, they were indicted as ‘disturbers of the peace.’ The prosecuting attorney made this formidable charge: ‘May it please your worships, these men are great disturbers of the peace; they can not meet a man in the road but they must ram a text of Scripture down his throat.’”

It was these persecutions against the Baptists of Virginia which aroused the sympathies of the renowned Patrick Henry, and caused him to volunteer his services in the



defense of the poor ministers who were dragged before the court as criminals “for preaching the Gospel of the Son of God.”

The resistless eloquence of Mr. Henry, poured forth in the defense of three Baptist ministers, will ever be remembered by the friends of American liberty. From the first settlement of the Baptists in America down to the achievement of American independence, they were “insulted, fined, imprisoned, and despised.” Nor was it until compelled by law, that the enemies of the Baptists ceased to lay violent hands on them on account of their principles. We are glad to know that there are numbers of pious persons in the various communions who did not then, nor would they now, indorse these persecuting measures against the Baptists. But circumstances indicate that many sectarian leaders would now lay violent hands on faithful Baptist ministers as in former times. This persecuting spirit is developed from day to day in the sectarian papers, pamphlets and books that are scattered broadcast over the land. The following is found in the *Banner of Peace*, of November 26, 1868, a Cumberland Presbyterian paper: “I think the Baptist Church is a clear despotism, if there is one on earth; and they ought to cover their lips and bury their faces in everlasting shame, and cease to abuse the papacy of Rome, and other sects, as they call them.” Elder N. H. Lee, of the Methodists, says: “It is not the Baptist people, as such, that I oppose, but it is the false principles and bigotry of her priesthood.” No doubt, such Baptist lovers as Elder Lee, and the *Banner of Peace* (?), if they had the power, would attempt to force Baptists, not only into “everlasting shame,” but to prison and death, on the account of their “false principles and bigotry,” as



their Pedobaptist ancestors, the Catholics, have always done when in power.

The country is fully supplied with books and tracts pouring their wrath, in denunciations, upon the Baptists on the account of their doctrine. Baptist views and history are continually misrepresented and perverted. Some who profess great friendship for Baptists, try to associate their history with the mad proceedings of Munster, or with the nude baptisms of the Catholics. And he who now dares to faithfully advocate Baptist principles, in contrast with the ecclesiastical inventions of modern times, is sure to be followed by a hungry school of ecclesiastical sharks, ready to devour his good name, and stamp, if possible, "everlasting shame" and infamy on his character. But I am happy to know that there are vast numbers of pious persons in the various sects who would not harm any one on the account of his principles. We here introduce the speech of Patrick Henry in defense of three Baptist preachers who were on trial for preaching. The following quotation is from the Religious Denominations, by Mr. Belcher :\* "Three Baptist preachers were brought to trial for preaching. The indictment brought against them was '*For preaching the Gospel of the Son of God,*' contrary to the statute in that case provided, and therefore, disturbers of the peace. The clerk was reading the indictment in a slow and formal manner, and he pronounced the crime with emphasis, '*For preaching the Gospel of the Son of God,*' when a plain-dressed man dismounted his horse, entered the court-house, and took his seat within the bar. He was known to the court and lawyers, but a stranger to the mass of spectators who had gathered on the occasion.

*Religious Denom.,*  
pp. 161-165.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



are about to be raised to claim their natural and inalienable rights ; when the yoke of oppression which has reached the wilderness of America, and the unnatural alliance of ecclesiastical and civil power is about to be dissevered, at such a period, when liberty—liberty of conscience—is about to awake from her slumberings and inquire into the reason of such charges as I find exhibited here to-day in this indictment!’ Another fearful pause, while the speaker alternately cast his sharp, piercing eyes on the court and the prisoners, and resumed : ‘ If I am not deceived, according to the contents of the paper I now hold in my hand, these men are accused of ‘ preaching the Gospel of the Son of God.’—GREAT GOD!’ Another long pause, during which he again waved the indictment around his head, while a deeper impression was made on the auditory. Resuming his speech : ‘ May it please your worships ; there are periods in the history of man, when corruption and depravity have so long debased the human character that man sinks under the weight of the oppressor’s hand and becomes his servile—his abject slave ; he licks the hand that smites him ; he bows in passive obedience to the mandates of the despot, and in this state of servility he receives his fetters of perpetual bondage. But, may it please your worships, such a day has passed away ! From the period when our fathers left the land of their nativity for settlement in these American wilds—for LIBERTY—for civil and religious liberty—for liberty of conscience—to worship their Creator according to their conceptions of Heaven’s revealed will,—from the moment they placed their feet on the American continent, and in the deeply imbedded forests sought an asylum from persecution and tyranny—from that moment despotism was



crushed ; her fetters of darkness were broken, and Heaven decreed that man should be free—free to worship God according to the Bible. Were it not for this, in vain have been the efforts and sacrifices of the colonists ; in vain were all their sufferings and bloodshed to subjugate this new world, if we, their offspring, must still be oppressed and persecuted. But, may it please your worships, permit me to inquire once more : For what are these men about to be tried ? This paper says, ‘for preaching the Gospel of the Son of God.’ GREAT GOD ! For preaching the Savior to Adam’s fallen race.’

After another pause, in tones of thunder he inquired : ‘WHAT LAW HAVE THEY VIOLATED ?’ Then, for the third time, in a slow, dignified manner, he lifted his eyes to heaven, and waved the indictment around his head. The court and the audience were now wrought up to the most intense pitch of excitement. The face of the prosecuting attorney was pale and ghastly, and he appeared unconscious that his whole frame was agitated with alarm ; and the judge, in a tremulous voice, put an end to the scene, now becoming extremely painful, by the authoritative command : ‘*Sheriff, discharge those men !*’ ”

We have not mentioned a tithe of the persecutions waged against modern Baptists. I must express the deliberate opinion, that if the men who denounce and misrepresent us to the extent of their ability, only had the power, they would apply fines and imprisonments as did the Episcopalians in the time of Patrick Henry.

Other authorities might be introduced to exhibit the bitterness of the opposition waged against Baptists from the modern pulpit and press. We have found that the Bible characteristic that the kingdom of Jesus Christ is



peculiarly persecuted and every-where spoken against, is fully identified in the modern history of the Baptists. They have been persecuted as no others have been, with peculiar hate and unrelenting bitterness. We now come to the close of the investigation, which settles, beyond successful contradiction, the fact *that the seven leading Baptist peculiarities are in reality the Bible peculiarities possessed by the apostolic churches.* We find the same characteristic features at both ends of the chain of church succession. And as these leading marks are proved to be essential features of the kingdom of Jesus Christ in its divine organization, and the prophetic word of God is pledged for the perpetuity of this church or kingdom, therefore we may expect to find these marks of identity possessed by the same kingdom in every age down to the present time. Though all these marks may not be visible at the same time to the eye of the historian, yet a sufficient number of them may be discovered to indicate the line of succession of that church against which the gates of hell were never to prevail. We will proceed in the next chapter with these seven Baptist marks, verified by the Scriptures, as a kind of standard, to measure the different periods on the line of succession, to see if these Baptist features have identified the church from the apostolic age down to the present.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



this be a just representation of the church or kingdom of Christ as it appeared in its establishment, it is manifest, that whenever we trace it in subsequent periods, we must find something that resembles it in its leading features. We shall discern a people holding the same views of the character and work of the Savior, owning subjection to him as the king whom God hath set upon his holy hill of Zion, evincing their allegiance to him by an implicit obedience to his laws, institutions, and ordinances, and discarding the doctrines and commandments of men. As the church at Jerusalem was the first Christian church established by the ministry of the apostles, so it was designed to serve as a pattern, in its faith and order, to all succeeding churches to the end of the world.”

It is admitted, that the churches of these early times were all modeled after the Jerusalem pattern; and, of course, they acknowledge Jesus as their Founder and Head, because the Jerusalem church—the pattern—had the Savior as its Founder and King. That these early churches had no human head, is seen in the following, from Mosheim, the historian: “The people were, undoubtedly, the first in authority; for the apostles showed, by their own example, that nothing of moment was to be carried on or determined without the consent of the assembly; and such a method of proceeding was both prudent and necessary in those critical times.”

This point was settled in the Bible investigation, which proved that the Baptist doctrine, which recognizes Jesus as the *Founder* and *Head* of his church, is also the teaching of the Word of God. We may conclude, therefore,



that the churches of this primitive period retained the Bible teaching, that Jesus Christ is the only Founder and Head of his church.

As regards the second and third peculiarities, which acknowledge the Scriptures as the rule of faith and practice and the divine order of the commandments, history affords no evidence that any other standard of faith except the Scriptures had been adopted in this period ; and, consequently, the order of the commandments remained unchanged, and therefore these early churches bore the *second and third* peculiarities of the Baptists as laid down in our catalogue. During this period the Christians had no human creeds or confessions of faith prepared by ecclesiastical reformers to govern the churches. Their appeal was to the laws of Jesus Christ as given by the apostles in all matters of religion.

It is also easily established that these early churches bore the peculiarity which requires the burial in baptism of those who are dead to sin. Mosheim says of this period : “ The sacrament of baptism was administered in this century (the first) without the public assemblies, in places appointed and prepared for that purpose, and was performed by an immersion of the whole body in the baptismal font.”

*Mos. Ch. History,*  
p. 28.

There was no sprinkling or infant baptism known in the first century. The whole body was buried or immersed in the baptismal font. And, of the second century, the same historian testifies as follows : “ The persons that were to be baptized, after they had repeated the creed, confessed and renounced their sins, and particularly the devil and his pompous allurements ; were immersed under water,

*Mos. Ch. History,*  
p. 47.



and received into Christ's kingdom by a solemn invocation of Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, according to the express command of our blessed Lord."

It was not until about the commencement of the third century that the error of baptismal salvation began to be introduced. On this point George Waddington, the learned Episcopal historian, remarks: "The original simplicity

*His. of the Church,*  
p. 37. of the office of baptism had already undergone some corruption. The symbol

had been gradually exalted at the expense of the thing signified, and the spirit of the ceremony was beginning to be lost in its form. Hence a belief was gaining ground among the converts, and was inculcated among the heathen, that the act of baptism gave remission of all sins committed previously to it." It was thus in the early part of the third century that the doctrine of baptismal salvation gained ground, especially in Africa. Neander, the celebrated historian, sustains this view in the follow-

*His. Three Centu-*  
*ries,* p. 199. ing language: "But while, on the one hand, the doctrine of the corruption and

guilt inherited by human nature, as the consequence of the first transgression, was reduced into a more systematic and distinct form, which was particularly the case in the North African Church (See below, in the history of the doctrines of Christianity), on the other hand, from want of proper distinction between the external and internal things of baptism (the baptism of water, and the baptism of the Spirit), the idea was forever gaining ground, and becoming more firmly fixed, that without outward baptism no one could be freed from that inherited guilt, saved from the eternal punishment which threatened him, or brought to eternal happiness; and while





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



erate. It is also clearly established that the primitive churches retained peculiarity fifth, which recognizes equal rights in the execution of the laws of the kingdom of Jesus Christ.

Mr. Waddington says: "It is also true that in the earliest government of the first Christian society, that of Jerusalem, not the elders only, but the whole church were associated with the apostles: and it is even certain that the terms bishop and elder, or presbyter, were, in the first instance, and for a short period, sometimes used synonymously, and indiscriminately applied to the same order in the ministry." *His. of the Church*, pp. 20, 21.

Yes: it is true that in the earliest government of the Christian churches, the *WHOLE CHURCH were associated together*. This description can now apply to no denomination except the Baptists. All other denominations make various distinctions in point of privilege among their members, and are not associated in church discipline, or the execution of the laws of Jesus Christ. The same his-

torian remarks, that: "In this election (of pastors) the people had an equal share with the presbyters and inferior clergy, without exception or distinction; and it is clear that their right in this matter was not barely testimonial, but judicial and elective. This appointment was final, requiring no confirmation from the civil power or any superior prelate; and thus, in the management of its internal affairs, every church was essentially independent of every other." *His. of the Church*, p. 23.

The same is confirmed by the learned Mosheim, who says: "It was, therefore, the assembly of the people which chose rulers and teachers, or received them by free and authoritative

*Mos. Ch. History*, p. 21.



consent when recommended by others. The same people rejected or confirmed, by their suffrages, the laws that were proposed by their rulers to the assembly ; excommunicated profligate and unworthy members of the church ; restored the penitent to their forfeited privileges ; passed judgment upon the different subjects of controversy and dissention that arose in their community ; examined and decided the disputes which happened between the elders and deacons ; and, in a word, exercised all that authority which belongs to such as are invested with sovereign power.”

This description of the churches of this early period will apply to no denomination on earth, known to me, except the Baptists. Again, Mosheim says : “ A bishop [or pastor,] during the first and second century, was a person who had the care of one Christian assembly, which, at that time was, generally speaking, small enough to be contained in a private house. In this assembly he acted, not so much with the authority of a master, as with the zeal and diligence of a faithful servant.” It can be amply sustained, from a multitude of historians of different parties, that the primitive churches, next to the apostolic age, maintained the equality, in point of privilege, of all the members of the churches, in the execution of church discipline, which characterized the apostolic churches, and which now distinguish the Baptists from all other denominations of Christendom.

*Mos. Ch. History,*  
p. 22.

Some persons seem to regard the form of church government a very trivial affair, and conclude that it matters very little whether the church government is a monarchy, aristocracy, or a democracy ; and that a privileged class of



men have a perfect right to make, change or abolish church laws, rites and ceremonies, at pleasure. Such persons deny that Jesus Christ made any laws whatever for the government of his own kingdom! These have partaken of the blasphemy of the little horn, of whom it was said: “And

*Dan. 7: 25.* he shall speak great words against the Most

High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High, and think to change times and laws.”

As all the false churches were set up and introduced by preachers, they have not failed to make ample provision for their own elevation and authority in those organizations; but in the kingdom of Christ, we find the people equal in authority in all matters of discipline, even to the trial of preachers themselves. In regard to this equality in the early churches, Mr. Robinson, the historian, says:

*Rob.'s Eccl. Res.,* “In the first period, which includes three  
p. 123. centuries, Christians were united as just

now mentioned. It was an union or compact, tacit or expressed, and the discipline was a confederate equality. Nobody was compelled to join a church; each was admitted singly, at his own request, by the consent of the whole society; affairs were debated and transacted by all; whoever were excluded, were excommunicated by joint consent, and if they repented and requested re-admission, they were re-admitted in the same manner; church officers were voluntarily elected for the sake of order; no society had any control over another,—advice might be given, but civil coercion was unknown: the whole was a state of perfect popular freedom;—this was a fraternal system of order.” Thus, we find the practice of the primitive churches in perfect harmony with the Scriptures and the churches under apostolic direction.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



were admitted to fellowship, and, in all religious matters, put on a footing of equality with their masters. It was a character to the Gospel that it was embraced by freemen—that slaves very seldom appeared in the primitive churches, and that, when they did, they appeared without compulsion—not as slaves but as brethren.” Other authorities might be adduced on this point; but it is unnecessary: for it is established, beyond reasonable doubt, that the primitive churches, during this period, possessed the Bible characteristic which now distinguishes the Baptists—*the equality of privilege in the execution of the laws in the kingdom of Christ.*

Furthermore: there is no difficulty in proving that the primitive churches retained the *sixth* peculiarity. It is already settled that the churches planted by the apostles were strict in their terms of communion. And as the Bible demands strict communion—and it is admitted that the primitive churches conformed to the Bible in this particular—therefore it is admitted that the primitive churches were strict in their terms of communion. And no one will contend that the primitive churches communed with the modern sects that now demand communion with Baptists; and, therefore, those who commune with these sects find neither precept nor example in the Word of God, or in the churches that flourished immediately after the apostolic age, for such an inconsistent practice. The mighty flood of persecution against the early Christians was not intended to make them give up their religion, but to force them to acknowledge the validity of pagan worship by burning incense to their gods, and thus communing with them. They were persecuted, not because they professed the Christian religion, but because they claimed it as *the only*



*true religion.* They would not, by any act of affiliation or communion, recognize the authority of the pagan worship. Pliny, the younger, said of them: "For I did not in the least hesitate, but that what-  
*Jones' Ch. His., p. 98.*  
ever should appear on confession to be their faith, yet that their forwardness and inflexible obstinacy would certainly deserve punishment." But Mr. Jones asks: "What was the 'inflexible obstinacy?' It could not be in professing a new religion; that was a thing common enough. It was the refusing all communion with paganism—refusing to throw a grain of incense on their altars. For we must not think, as is commonly imagined, that this was at first enforced by the magistrate to make them renounce their religion; but only to give a test of its hospitality and sociableness of temper. It was, indeed, and rightly, too, understood by the Christians to be a renouncing of their religion, and so, accordingly, abstained from. The misfortune was, that the pagans did not consider the inflexibility as a mere error, but as an immorality likewise. This unsociable, uncommunicable temper in matters of religious worship, was esteemed, by the best of them, as a hatred and aversion to mankind. Thus, Tacitus, speaking of the burning of Rome, calls Christians 'persons convicted of hatred to all mankind.' But how? The confessions of the pagans themselves concerning the purity of the Christian morals, shows this could be no other than a being 'convicted' of rejecting all intercommunity of worship,—which, so great was their prejudice, they thought could proceed from nothing but hatred toward mankind. Universal prejudice had made men regard a refusal of this intercommunity as the most brutal of all dissociability. And the Emperor JULIAN, who un-



derstood this matter the best of any, fairly owns that the Jews and Christians brought the execration of the world upon them by their aversion to the gods of paganism, and their refusal of all communication with them."

The whole sectarian world, which may be regarded as Christianized paganism, now look upon the true Baptists in a similar light as did the ancient pagans upon the early Christians who refused all communion with them. In truth, the above quotation from Jones, with very little modification, will now represent the views and feelings of other denominations toward Baptists. These denominations accuse us, as the pagans did the early Christians, with "refusing all communion with" them; with being "unsociable" "and uncommunicable;" of temper "in matters of religious worship;" and with being "persons convicted of hatred to all" other denominations. But we rejoice in the fact that we are now reproached for the very same practice that brought reproach upon the first Christians after the apostolic age. And Mosheim says, in regard

*Mos. Ch. History,*  
p. 21.

to the catechumens, that: "The latter were such as had not yet been dedicated to God and Christ by baptism, and were, therefore, neither admitted to the public prayers nor to the *holy communion*, nor to the ecclesiastical assemblies."

These catechumens who were, in the latter part of the second century, considered imperfect Christians, were not, as unbaptized persons, admitted to the communion of the church. Justin Martyr, who wrote his apology, which was addressed to the Emperor Antoninus Pius, about the year

*Memo. of Early Christ.,* p. 182.

138 after Christ, speaks of the order of baptism and communion, as reported by Miall, as follows: "He speaks of the received





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



identified in the history of the churches of this period. It was declared by the Savior himself, that the true disciples should be hated of all nations for his name's sake. Mosheim, the historian, informs us that Nero, who was emperor of Rome in the first century, accused the Christians of having set fire to the city—a crime which he himself had committed,—and to punish them, “He therefore wrapped

*Mos. Ch. History,*  
p. 16: up some of them in combustible garments, and ordered fire to be set to them when the

darkness came on, that thus, like torches, they might dispel the obscurity of the night; while others were fastened to crosses, or torn to pieces by wild beasts, or put to death in some such dreadful manner. This horrid persecution was set on foot in the month of November, in the sixty-fourth year of Christ; and in it, according to some ancient accounts, St. Paul and St. Peter suffered martyrdom, though the latter assertion is contested by many as being absolutely irreconcilable with chronology.”

It will be observed, that during this period, extending to the middle of the third century, the Christians were persecuted by the heathen. The horrid and blasphemous practice of professed Christians slaughtering each other in the name of Jesus Christ, was, at this period, unknown to the world. It was during this time that the ten pagan persecutions spent their fury against the disciples of the despised Nazarine. No history, whether sacred or profane, has ever questioned the fact that these early Christians were peculiarly persecuted by their own emperors. Mr.

*Orch. Bapt. His.,*  
*vol. I, p. 163.* Orchard says: “The city of Lyons was again visited with the vengeance of the emperor. Severus, in 202, treated the Christians of this city with the greatest cruelty. Such was the



excess of his barbarity that the rivers were colored with human blood, and the public places of the city were filled with the dead bodies of professors. It is recorded of this church, that since its formation it has been watered with the blood of twenty thousand martyrs.” And the sufferings of the disciples of Christ in this city, are only a sample of what they suffered in other countries. Among the vast numbers who were tortured in this city, Eusebius gives the following account of several individuals: “Maturus, therefore, and Sanctus, and Blandina, and

Attalus, were led into the amphitheater to the wild beasts, and to the common spec-

*Euseb. Eccl. Hist.,*  
pp. 175, 176.

tacle of heathenish inhumanity,—the day for exhibiting the fight with wild beasts being designedly published on our account. Maturus, however, and Sanctus, again passed through all the tortures in the amphitheater, just as if they had suffered nothing at all before, or rather as those who in many trials before had defeated the adversary, and now contending for the crown itself, again, as they passed, bore the strokes of the scourge usually inflicted there, the draggings and lacerations from the beasts, and all of the madness of the people, one here and another there, cried for and demanded; and last of all, the iron chair, upon which their bodies were roasted, while the fumes of their own flesh ascended to annoy them. The tormentors did not cease even then, but continued to rage so much the more, intending, if possible, to conquer their perseverance. They could not, however, elicit or hear anything from Sanctus besides that confession which he had uttered from the beginning. These two, therefore, in whom life for the most part had remained through the mighty conflict, were at last dispatched. On that day they were made an ex-



hibition to the world, in place of the variety of gladiatorial combats. Blandina, however, was bound and suspended on a stake, and thus exposed as food to the assaults of wild beasts; and as she thus appeared to hang after the manner of the cross, by her earnest prayers she infused much alacrity into the contending martyrs. \* \* \* \*

But as none of the beasts then touched her, she was taken down from the stake and remanded back again to prison, to be reserved for another contest. \* \* \* Thus she overcome the enemy in many trials, and in the conflict received the crown of immortality." Attalus, after being twice exposed in the theater, was finally beheaded.

Vast numbers were thus tortured, and after their death many of their bodies were cast into heaps outside of the city, and guarded day and night to prevent friends from burying the remains of their mutilated bodies. Multitudes suffered throughout the Roman empire. At Carthage the cruelty resembled that perpetrated at Lyons. Among the multitudes of martyrs at this city, we only give the account of the cruel martyrdom of two females, as reported in Jones' Church History.

After Perpetua had entered the theater among the wild beasts, singing praises to God, her execution is thus reported: "Perpetua and Felicitas were first inclosed in a

*Jones' Ch. His.,* net, and then exposed to a wild cow. But  
p. 115. this sight struck the spectators with hor-

ror, as the former was a delicate woman, and the breasts of the latter were streaming with milk after her delivery. They were, therefore, recalled, and exposed in a common loose dress. Perpetua was first tossed by the beast, and, being thrown down, she had the presence of mind to compose her dress as she lay on the ground.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



## SECTION II.—BISHOP AND ELDER THE SAME OFFICE

In human religious societies the membership have not only been deprived of their rights of participation in the transaction of church business, but a gradation of ministerial offices has been inaugurated which places some ministers over others in point of office, as lords over their brethren. It will be found, upon a strict examination of the New Testament, that there are only two classes of officers in the churches of Christ, and they are chosen by, and are amenable to, the churches for their official actions. In truth, they are only servants of the churches. This was fully shown in chapter twelve, where peculiarity fifth is tested by the Bible.

At this place we design to introduce authorities to show that the primitive churches recognized the Bible doctrine of the official equality of bishops (episcopoi) and elders (presbuteroi). Mr. Miall, in his Memorials, says: “But, besides these extraordinary officers, each church possessed the power, under the advice and admonition of the apostles, of electing distinct officers for the arrangement of its peculiar concerns. These were presbyters (as they were designated by the application of a term in use by the Jewish synagogues) or bishops (as they were called at a somewhat later period by a phrase familiar to Gentile usages). The terms are obviously interchangeable—the former referring to the character which fitted them for the office; the latter to the relations of the office itself.” And Neander, the historian, to the same effect, affirms: “That the name also, *episcopos*, was altogether synonymous with that

*Memo. of Early Christ.*, p. 76.

*His. Three Centuries*, p. 106.



of presbyter, is clearly collected by the passages of Scripture where both appellations are interchanged (Acts xx; compare ver. 17 with ver. 28: Epistle to Titus, ch. i: verses 5 and 7), as well as from those where the mention of the office of deacon follows immediately after that of 'episcopi;' so that a third class of officers could not lie between the two." And even Mr. Waddington, the Episcopal historian, affirms that: "It is also true; that in the earliest government of the first Christian society—that of Jerusa-*His. of the Church,*  
lem—not the elders only, but the whole *p. 20.*  
church were associated with the apostles: and it is even certain that the terms bishop and elder, or presbyter, were in the first instance, and for a short period, sometimes used synonymously, and indiscriminately applied to the same order in the ministry."

Thus it is seen that the early churches of this period followed the example of the apostolic churches in the election of their officers. The gradation of ministerial offices in the churches has no support from the Scriptures. The only offices retained in the churches are those of *elders* or bishops and *deacons*, and these must be chosen or elected by the churches. The idea of a universal bishop over all the churches, is peculiar to Rome and her off-shoots. A bishop or elder, in the New Testament, was simply a minister chosen and ordained to the work by the authority of the congregation. There were sometimes a plurality of bishops in one church; and in the apostolic age the episcopacy of one elder never extended beyond the bounds of one congregation. The idea of one man acting as pastor for three or four churches, is a modern custom which should be abandoned.



By reference to Acts, twentieth chapter, it will be seen that Paul “sent to Ephesus and called the elders of the church,” verse seventeen; and to the same *elders* he said:

*Acts* 20: 28. “Take heed, therefore, unto yourselves, and to all the flock over the which the Holy Ghost

hath made you *overseers*, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.” The word *overseers* in this passage, is *episcopous* in the Greek—the word which is usually translated *bishops*; but to have rendered it *bishops* in this place, would have shown that elder and bishop is the same office, which would have condemned the church of the translators. In the first ages of the church, there was no such a thing known as the bishop of a state or province. As before seen, Mosheim says: “A

*Mos. Ch. History*, *bishop, during the first and second century,*  
p. 20. *was a person who had the care of one*

*Christian assembly, which, at that time,*  
*was, generally speaking, small enough to be contained in a*  
*private house. In this assembly he acted, not so much with*  
*the authority of a master, as with the zeal and diligence of*  
*a faithful servant.”*

We have emphasized this statement of the historian to call attention to the importance of the subject. It was left for the corruptions of after times to establish the diocesan episcopacy, which has overshadowed the nations with a gloomy spiritual despotism for many centuries.

---

### SECTION III.—LEADING ERRORS WHICH ORIGINATED DURING THIS PERIOD.

The apostle Paul predicted that there would “come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition;” and that the

2 *Thess.* 2: 3.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



be regarded as the advisers of neighboring churches, and paved the way for an assertion of superiority which speedily passed the bounds of apostolical prescription." This usurpation of authority over the churches, which began to show itself as early as the close of the second century, continued gradually to unfold itself till the faithful churches were compelled, in order to preserve their purity, to declare non-fellowship for those ministers and churches which had adopted the corrupt principles of church government. It was this first apparently small departure from the true system of government which, in future times, culminated into that huge system of stupendous fraud and despotism known as the Romanish Church.

Second: The second leading error which originated in this period, is the doctrine of *baptismal salvation*. This doctrine was based upon the false interpretation of those Scriptures which speak of baptism for remission of sins; and especially John, where they made *born of water*, mean baptism. It is admitted that baptism represents the washing away of sins. The same principles of Scripture interpretation which gave birth to baptismal salvation, also gave birth to transubstantiation. Of this defection from the truth on the part of some, Miall remarks: "In the

*Memo. of Early Christ., p. 368.* ante-Nicene period, sin was regarded much more in its overt demonstrations than in its spiritual destructiveness; repentance had degenerated into penance; regeneration into baptism; justification by faith, into just what the ninetieth number of 'The Tracts for the Times' declares it to be; and sanctification was lost in the names of sacred persons, sacred things, and sacred places. All this was before the Papacy had begun to blazon its triple crown, or to set its



feet upon the necks of kings.” It is difficult to ascertain at what precise point of time the error of baptismal salvation was first advocated; it is certain, however, that it was advocated by a large number as early as the middle of the third century; and it is likely that some embraced this view as early as the close of the second century. Baptismal salvation was an innovation brought in, in some places, along with the change of the form of church government to a hierarchy. Neander and Waddington both testify that baptismal salvation was a departure from the original doctrine of the design of baptism. And when this superstitious error concerning baptism was established, it opened the way for other superstitions, which tended to clothe the baptismal ceremony with a mysterious grandeur and importance which excited the admiration of the people. Among the attending superstitions added to baptismal salvation, may be mentioned the sign of the cross, blowing in the mouth of the candidate, the use of crism, and the giving of the newly baptized persons milk and honey, as a symbol of the new life.

Third: Another serious error, which appeared in this period, is that which is usually called infant baptism. This error originated about the beginning of the third century. It appeared immediately after the introduction of baptismal salvation. It at first prevailed mostly in North Africa. As it had no support from the Scriptures, it claimed *tradition* for its authority. Origin, the great champion of infant baptism in the third century, supported infant baptism upon the authority of tradition. Neander remarks that: “Origin, in whose system infant baptism stood very high, though not in the same point of view as

*His. Three First Centuries*, p. 200.



the North African Church, declares that it is an apostolic tradition,—a declaration which can not, in that century, be considered of any great weight, because men were at that time so much inclined to deduce the ordinances, which they thought of great importance, from the apostles; and, beside this, there were many partition walls between this and the apostolic age, which prevented a free insight into that age.” It appears, then, that the first advocates of infant baptism did not attempt to sustain it from the Word of God, but upon the authority of *tradition*. Neander, the historian, admits that: “It is certain

*Ibid.*, p. 198. that Christ did not ordain infant baptism.”

“We can not prove that the apostles ordained infant baptism;” and, “The first passage which appears expressly to point to this matter, is found in Irenæus.” It is thought that Irenæus alludes to infant baptism because he speaks of regeneration in connection with infants. This view is based upon the supposition that Irenæus uses the term regeneration as synonymous with baptism when referring to infants. It is admitted that some writers, about this time, used the term regeneration, in a figurative way, to denote baptism; but there is no evidence that Irenæus used the term in the sense of baptism in the instance referred to. Irenæus does not mention infant baptism at all. He flourished in the latter part of the second century. No writer in the *second century* has mentioned infant baptism at all. “Tertullian

*Orch. Bapt. His.*,  
vol. I, p. 69. was inquired of, by a rich lady named Quintilla, who lived at Pepuza, a town of Phrygia, whether infants might be baptized on condition *they asked to be baptized*, and produced sponsors?” This was not an inquiry about the





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



baptism, which was the offspring of baptismal salvation, produced a harvest of error and superstitions. The first among these is infant communion. Mr. Robinson says, that: “The same Innocent very consistently introduced infant communion;—this grew out of infant baptism, as that did out of original sin.”

*Rob.’s Eccl. Res.*,  
p. 151.

The order of the rise of infant baptism and communion is reported by Mr. Robinson as having been stated by Jerom-Piescarski in the synod of Brest, in 1558, in Lithuania, as follows: “He then came to baptism, and affirmed that infant baptism had no place in the Scripture; that in the two first centuries it was not mentioned; that it rose in Africa in the third century, and was opposed by Tertullian; that the first canons to enjoin it were made at a council at Mela, in Africa, in the year four hundred and eighteen; that infant communion came in at the same time; that before this, people were put into the state of catechumens, and instructed in the Christian faith; that then they were examined concerning their faith, and, on confessing it, were baptized by immersion; that in the fourth and fifth centuries, while the Papal power continued feeble, though increasing, the children of believers, even those of bishops, were not baptized till they were adults, and some, as Ambrose, not till they had been elected and were going to accept the office of bishops; and that some deferred it till they were just ready to die.” In this quotation we have an account of the gradual growth of infant baptism among those who finally assumed the title of Catholic Church. Infant baptism also gave rise to the superstitions and blasphemous custom of having “god-fathers and god-

*Rob.’s Eccl. Res.*,  
p. 579.



mothers.” These *god-fathers* and *god-mothers* were to answer the questions, promise to renounce the devil, etc., and make profession of faith, instead of the child. We have thus briefly sketched the rise of these fundamental errors, which, in after years, overflowed the world with a mighty deluge of superstition and crime. Dr. Gill, in speaking of the rise of infant baptism and popery, uses the following strong language: “The two are, in fact, indissolubly united—one in their origin, their growth, and their results. The same mother-heresy—Baptismal Regeneration—which gave birth to Popery, gave birth to infant baptism. They were engendered in the same dark womb of ignorance and superstition. They came forth together. They grew up together. Together they overspread the nations. And together shall they disappear before the light of Christ’s Gospel, and the brightness of his coming.” After thirty-five years’ investigation of the question of infant baptism, the learned J. Newton Brown gave utterance to the following language: “Infant baptism is an error from beginning to end; corrupt in theory, and corrupting in practice; born in superstition, cradled in fear, nursed in ignorance, supported by fraud, and spread by force: doomed to die in the light of historical investigation, and its very memory to be loathed in all future ages by a disabused church. In the realms of despotism it has shed the blood of martyrs in torrents: that blood cries against it to heaven; and a long-suffering God will yet be the terrible avenger. The book before us is a swift witness against it.” This condensed statement contains the truth, as found in history, of the rise and fearful results of infant baptism. Some

*Pillar of Popery,*  
p. 42.

*Baptist Martyrs,*  
p. 13.



have plead for infant baptism on the ground of its antiquity ; but if the age of a doctrine proved its correctness, then many of the grossest superstitions of Rome must be correct, for they are as ancient as infant baptism. No error has the right to plead antiquity. A doctrine without the support of the Scriptures, must be given up.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



maintained firm for the Bible doctrine of purity, in faith and worship, were called by their enemies Novatians. It has already been seen, that they did not originate with Novatian, but were the descendants of the primitive churches. We now proceed to examine more fully into the Baptist character of the people called Novatians. When we say Baptist character, we mean Bible character; for we have already proved that the Baptist peculiarities are the Bible peculiarities: we will, therefore, use the phrases *Baptist peculiarities* and *Bible peculiarities* synonymously. We now proceed to examine the Novatian peculiarities.

*First:* They claimed no other founder and head except Jesus Christ. This is seen in the fact, as already shown, that they “Have some just claims to be regarded as the pure, uncorrupted, and apostolic church of Christ.” And as they claim to be the pure, uncorrupted, and apostolic church, they must have claimed Jesus as their Founder and Head.

*Religious Encyc.,*  
p. 877.

Of their claims, Neander says: “The Novatianists, therefore, as they claimed to be the only unstained, pure church, called themselves *oi katharoi*—‘the pure.’” The charge that Novatian was the founder of the Novatian churches, is without solid foundation. It is well to observe, however, that they have never been charged with claiming Novatian either as founder or head. It was their bitter foes that made this charge. The Novatians were counted heretics by the corrupt party who began to call themselves Catholics. Mr. Waddington gives the following necessary caution: “Charges, indeed, or insinuations of the grossest impurities, are sometimes thrown out by the orthodox writers

*His. Three First Centuries,* p. 147.

*His. of the Church,*  
p. 59.



against the early heretics; but we are bound to receive them with great caution, because the answers which may have been given to them are lost, and because they are not generally justified by any authentic records which we possess respecting the lives of those heretics.” And Mr. Robinson says: “The history of Novatian is long, and, like that of all others in his condition, beclouded with fables and slander.” The Novatian churches possess the Baptist peculiarity of acknowledging no founder and head except Jesus Christ.

*Rob.'s Eccl. Res.,*  
p. 126.

*Second:* The Novatians claimed no other standard of faith and practice except the Bible. Very little need be said on this point, as they have never been charged with appealing to any standard except the Scriptures. The Novatians were also called Paterines, in after-times; and they are known to have claimed the Scriptures alone as their rule of conduct. It is, therefore, taken for granted—unless proof to the contrary can be produced—that the Novatians possessed the Baptist characteristic that the Word of God alone is the rule of faith and practice.

*Third:* The Novatians also held the *Bible order of the commandments*. Mr. Robinson states the Novatian doctrine thus: “The Novatians said, if you be a virtuous believer, and will accede to our confederacy against sin, you may be admitted among us by baptism; or if any Catholic has baptized you before, by re-baptism; but, mark this: if you violate the contract by lapsing into idolatry or vice, we shall separate you from our community, and, do what you will, we shall never readmit you.” This shows that the order observed by the Novatians was to

*Rob.'s Eccl. His.,*  
p. 127.



admit no one to baptism except believers ; and the complaints of their enemies, as well as their own statements concerning the strictness of their discipline, settle the point that they only observed the communion with those who had been baptized and were in church-fellowship.

*Rob.'s Eccl. His.,* p. 125. The Novatians “look upon every society which readmitted heinous offenders to

communion, as unworthy of the title of a true Christian church.” From this we discover that the

Novatians were so strict in their views of communion that they did not regard an open-communion church, one that admits heinous offenders, as worthy of the name of a Christian church. In fact, no party of professed Christians had at this time so far departed from the Bible order of the commandments as to place communion before baptism.

Dr. Wall, the learned Episcopalian, sums up the facts of history on this point, in the following words : “Among

*His. of Inf. Baptism,* p. 786. all the absurdities that ever were held, none ever maintained that,—that any per-

son should partake of the communion before he was baptized.” And as we have no account of the

Novatians, or any others, attempting to change the order of repentance and faith, we may, therefore, justly conclude that the Novatians possessed the Baptist peculiarity of holding *repentance, faith, baptism, and the Lord's Supper.*

*Fourth:* The Novatians also possessed the Bible peculiarity of burying in baptism only those who professed to be dead to sin. We have already shown that they baptized only believers. It has been observed, no doubt, that we have not discussed the claims of the Donatists ; not because they did not possess the characteristics of the Church





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



expressly declared here (Rom. vi: 4, and Col. ii: 12), that we are *buried with Christ in baptism* by being buried under the water; and the argument to oblige us to conformity to his death, by dying to sin, being taken hence; and this immersion being religiously *observed by all Christians for thirteen centuries*, and approved by the church; and the change of it into sprinkling, even without any allowance from the author of the institution, or any license from any council of the church, being that which the Romanist still urgeth to justify his refusal of the cup to the laity." But we have more direct evidence that the Novatians practiced immersion as baptism. Mr. Orchard, the historian, says of the Novations, that "all converts were immersed, and all proselyted from other churches were *re-immersed*."

*Hinton's His. of Baptism*, p. 109.

*S. Bapt. Review*, p. 118.

Also, speaking of the church at Rome, Mr. Robinson says: "Not one natural infant of any description appears in this church during the first three centuries, and immersion was the only method of baptizing."

*Rob.'s Eccl. Res.*, p. 130.

Again, Mr. Robinson says: "No alteration was made in the mode of administering baptism. It was dipping every-where, and nothing else." The Novatians not only immersed

*Rob.'s Eccl. Res.*, p. 384.

their candidates, but they re-immersed those who had been previously immersed by other parties; hence they were stigmatized as *Anabaptists*. On this point, Mr. Orchard

*Orch. His. of Eng. Bap.*, vol. II, p. 12.

says: "I am satisfied that the Church of Christ, which has *witnessed for him*, has, from the days of Novatian, been stigmatized with the name of Anabaptists. This re-baptizing,



standing as it does in ecclesiastical, political and commercial history, decides, in the most satisfactory manner, our jealousy over the house of God, and our watchful care for Scriptural communion." We consider it a point established beyond successful controversy, that the Novatians possessed the Baptist characteristic of holding the burial with Christ, only of those who professed to be dead to, or freed from, sin.

Before leaving this point, it may be proper to mention the fact, that Novatian himself is said to have been *asperged* for baptism. Of Novatian, Eusebius quotes Cornelius as saying:—"To him, indeed, the author and instigator of his faith was Satan, who entered into and dwelt in him a

*Euseb. Eccl. His.,*  
p. 266.

long time; who, aided by the exorcists, when attacked with an obstinate disease, and being supposed at the point of death, was baptized by aspersion, in the bed on which he lay—if, indeed, it be proper to say that one like him did receive baptism." Again, Cornelius, the enemy and rival of Novatian, says of him: "This illustrious character abandoning the Church of

*Ibid, p. 266.*

God, in which, when he was converted, he was honored with the presbytery, and that by the favor of the bishop placing his hands upon him (ordaining him) to the order of bishop, and as all the clergy and many of the laity resisted it, since it was not lawful that one baptized in his sick bed by aspersion, as he was, should be promoted to any order of the clergy, the bishop requested that it should be granted him to ordain only this one." There are evidently two points in this charge of Cornelius against the claims of Novatian. *First:* The validity of his baptism is questioned, on the ground of his being an improper subject; for Cornelius



says: "If, indeed, it be proper to say that *one like him* did receive baptism." Cornelius had declared that the *faith of Novatian had been instigated by Satan*, and that he was possessed with the Devil, who had entered into him; and that he received baptism in bed, through fear of death. Without referring to the truth or falsehood of these charges, at the present, a very important point is brought out by them—viz: that even in the most corrupt party, in this period, it was considered *necessary* that one should be a *good man* to render his baptism valid. *Second*: That *aspersion* was considered, at most, imperfect baptism; for Cornelius said: "It was not lawful that one baptized in his sick bed by aspersion, as he was, should be promoted to any order of the clergy." This was designed to be the statement of a general *law* or custom, *that no one, it matters not what his spiritual condition, who was baptized in his sick bed by aspersion, was eligible to the office of the ministry*. This view is sustained from the fact that the bishop that ordained Novatian pleaded "that it should be granted him to ordain only this one," who had been aspersed in his sick bed. And more: If there had been no design to cast suspicion on the character of Novatian's baptism on account of the "mode," why did Cornelius repeatedly state that it was "by aspersion?" It appears, that in the former of the two quotations from Cornelius, the charge against the validity of Novatian's baptism is mainly based on his depraved character; but, in the latter, the point is made prominent, that aspersion is imperfect baptism, and not sufficient for a candidate for the ministerial office. Elder Geo. Varden, in his valuable criticism, found in the *Baptist Monthly* for 1867, shows clearly that the writers who have based the objection of





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



sion that sprinkling, or rather pouring, was an imperfect baptism, and, therefore, did not secure the blessings promised to immersion.' Cyprian thus meets this state of things, Epistle 76: 'If any one supposes that they obtain nothing because the waters of salvation have been only poured on them, but are destitute (of God's grace), let them not be deceived, but, if they regain their health, *let them be baptized.*' It is clear that by *baptizentur*, Cyprian means immersion; it stands in contrast to *perfusi sunt*. Is not this passage proof that, though perfusion was, in the middle of the third century, allowed, it was unsatisfactory and informal? Meeting the same issue, Cyprian, in the same epistle, remarks: 'In the sacraments of salvation, when necessity compels and God grants indulgence, the divine compends confer the whole (that immersion does) on those that believe.' He means, that though the rite be abridged from immersion to perfusion, yet, in cases of necessity, the latter mode will secure the divine blessing on the recipient. Perfusion is an *abridgment* of the divine command, and was vindicated only in *cases of necessity.*"

The above testimony of Cyprian is but the voice of history in regard to the popular party which, in later times, changed both the action and subjects of baptism, and produced that monstrous system called Popery. It can not be found in history that a single case of sprinkling, pouring, aspersion, or perfusion, for baptism, has ever occurred among the Novatians, unless Novatian himself was one. And it will be remembered that Novatian received his "baptism," unless he was *re-baptized*, in the lax party from which he separated on the account of their loose discipline. In regard to the rise of *aspersion*, Elder Varden remarks: "We shall quote only one Pedobaptist author



to evince this. Alting says: ‘*Aspersio* is first mentioned by Cyprian, who died as a martyr, A. D. 259. Those who could not with safety be immersed, in consequence of sickness, had water poured over them; but it was doubted whether such a baptism was lawful. But Cyprian took in hand to defend it—in such a way, however, as not to censure those who opposed it; yet even he did not maintain that it could be employed promiscuously with immersion in cases of health.’ And in another place Alting tells us that ‘Cyprian, arguing for aspersio, employed *neither apostolic testimony nor example*.’ And we may add, that of all the laws which, during centuries, were made concerning baptism, no one made sprinkling and immersion indifferent, till the Council of Ravenna, A. D. 1311, declared them so. Hence it is that the scholastic theologians, while they argue for pouring and sprinkling, declare immersion *the safest mode*.”

From this statement of the facts of history in regard to the rise of aspersio, etc., for baptism, it is clearly shown that the first advocates of this departure from the divine pattern, did not plead the example of the apostles, or the Scriptures, to justify their course. Aspersio was plead in cases of *necessity*, where the subject was in danger of death. It was, therefore, the idea of baptismal salvation which produced the change from immersion to perfusion, pouring, and finally, to sprinkling, which was established by law, at Ravenna, in *thirteen hundred and eleven*.

But, to return to the case of Novatian: there is no reliance to be placed in the charges of Cornelius against Novatian, because it is known that he accused him with many things of which he was not guilty. Novatian was the first at Rome to make a successful stand against the corruptions



advocated by the popular party of which Cornelius was the head. Cornelius, in his malice, tried to invalidate the character, religion, baptism, and ministry, of Novatian. In his letters, to Fabius, bishop of Antioch, he called Novatian a “malicious beast”; and he accuses him of “villainy,” “fraud and treachery”; that Satan instigated “his faith” and entered into him, “and dwelt a long time.” Cornelius accused Novatian of drunkenness and blasphemy, with many other dreadful crimes. But as all those charges concerning his morality are known to be *utterly false*, is there no room to doubt the testimony of Cornelius concerning the aspersion of Novatian? Must we take the statements of a known fabricator of *falsehoods*? But, granting that it is true that Novatian had no baptism at all, this has nothing to do with the succession of those who were nicknamed *Novatians*; for they, as a religious community, neither received their baptism nor origin from Novatian. The want of baptism in Novatian can no more affect the succession of the Novatians than the “alien” immersion of a Baptist preacher can affect the Baptist succession. The Novatians did not practice aspersion at all. They were so strict in regard to the purity of baptism that they would not receive the immersions performed by the popular party. They did not regard the corrupt churches as churches of Christ, and, therefore, they considered their immersions as invalid.

*Fifth*: And again, it is evident that the Novatians possessed the Baptist peculiarity of holding *equality in privilege in the transaction of church business*. This has been a cherished point of doctrine with the Baptists in all ages. The usurpation of lordship over the churches, by ministers in the corrupt party, developed itself gradually in the





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



corrupted the doctrine of Christianity by their opinions; their crime was, that, by the unreasonable severity of their discipline, they gave occasion to the most deplorable divisions, and made an unhappy schism in the church.”

The Novatians were so strict in their discipline that they would not admit, under any circumstances, to their communion those of their own members who relapsed into idolatry, in times of persecution. They would not receive to their communion immersed persons from other parties without “re-baptism”; and consequently they obtained from their enemies the odious name of *Anabaptists*. On

*S. Bapt. Review*, p. 119. this point, Mr. Orchard truly says: “Where there is ANABAPTISM there can be no open communion.” The Novatians

“*re-baptized* ;” therefore, they were strict in their terms of communion. The historic proof is overwhelming, that the Novatians possessed the Baptist peculiarity of restricted communion.

Lastly, there is no difficulty in showing that the Novatians possessed the peculiarity of being *persecuted* and every-where *spoken against*. On the subject of the persecutions of the Novatians, Mr. Orchard says: “Innocent

*Orch. Bapt. His.*, p. 60. wrote many letters to various bishops, containing the rules of discipline in his church, plainly with the intention of establishing

uniformity. This uniformity could not be imposed on the Novatianists, nor would they receive his views on children’s baptism and communion; they, consequently, became the object of his aversion. Another means of awakening the Catholic prelates’ anger, was *re-baptizing*. \* \* \* In the fourth Lateran council, canons were made to banish them as heretics, and these canons were supported by an



edict, in 413, issued by the emperors Theodosius and Honorius, declaring that all persons *re*-baptized, and the *re*-baptizers, should be both punished with death. Accordingly, Albanus, a zealous minister, with others, was punished with death, for re-baptizing.” It should be observed that the persecutions during the former period were by the pagans; but the persecutions of the Novatians were by professed Christians. No sooner was the adulterous union formed between church and state, by Constantine, than persecution began to be waged in the name of Christianity. In the fourth century the Novatians were persecuted under the Arian emperor, Valens. It made no difference whether the orthodox Catholics, or Arians, had the ascendancy—they both alike persecuted the hated Novatians. Mr. Jones, the historian, says: “But the conduct of Valens was not regulated by the strict rules of equity; for in his persecutions he included the Novatians, whose churches he commanded to be shut up, and their pastors banished, although, so far as I can perceive, they took no part whatever in the squabbles that existed between the contending factions.” Though the Novatians were bitterly persecuted by all parties who possessed the power, yet, when they were tolerated, they used their influence to relieve those who had persecuted them. They never persecuted others. The council of Nice convened in the year 325, in order to settle the Arian controversy. The Emperor Constantine, who called this council, decided that its decrees were infallible; for he said: “What they had decreed was the will of God, and that the agreement of so great a number of such bishops was by inspiration of the Holy Ghost.” So Con-

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
p. 149.

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
p. 137.



stantine banished, and persecuted in various ways, the Novatians, and others, for refusing to submit to the decrees of the council of Nice. It is admitted by all historians that the Novatians were peculiarly hated, persecuted, and everywhere spoken against, because of their faith and practice; therefore, the Novatians possessed, in an eminent degree, that characteristic which points out the Baptists as persecuted and every-where spoken against.

We have now seen that the Baptist peculiarities were possessed by the Novatians, and as these are Bible peculiarities, we therefore conclude, that the Novatians form a part of the succession of Scriptural churches against which the gates of hell have never prevailed. The Novatians possessed those peculiar marks, in all that is essential to church organization, which would now identify them with the Baptists. The Donatists of Africa possessed the same peculiarities with the Novatians, and, on this account, may be called the Novatians of Africa. And in regard to the Baptist character of these people, Osiander, a writer

of the sixteenth century, affirms: "That  
*See D'Anvers on* our modern Anabaptists were the same  
*Bapt., p. 223.* with the Donatists of old. And Fuller, in  
 his Ecclesiastical History (l. 5, p. 229), saith, that the  
 Anabaptists are the Donatists, new dipt. Bullinger saith,  
 the Donatists and the Anabaptists held the same opin-  
 ions (Lib. 5, fol. 216, 222,) of baptism."

Other authorities might be introduced in confirmation of the Baptist character of the Novatians, but it is wholly unnecessary. It is absolutely impossible for any other denomination in Christendom to claim, with any show of truth, identity with the Novatians, either in doctrine or history. The Novatian period brings us down to the





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



of individual congregations and persons from the kingdom of Christ. This is in keeping with the testimony of John, where he says, concerning "Antichrists," that:

1 John 2: 19. "They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us."

These Antichrists *went out*; but if the church had apostatized, then there would have been no going out. It has ever been the policy of Satan, in attempting to thwart the designs of Heaven, to institute a counterfeit to the various points of divine worship. When Jesus Christ ordained true apostles, the Devil ordained false apostles; when Jesus ordained true ministers, the Devil ordained his ministers, who transformed themselves into ministers of righteousness; when Jesus Christ established his ordinances, Satan also established counterfeit ordinances; when Jesus Christ established his church, Satan proceeded to establish counterfeit churches. And by this satanic policy of counterfeiting, the Devil has done more to impede the cause of Christ than by any other means which he has ever invented. And in order the better to open the way for every new invention in the way of church organization which he may wish to establish, he has induced the world to believe that the church established by Christ has apostatized. And now we have hundreds of so-called churches in the world, claiming to be either the church or branches of the Church of Christ. Old papal Rome stands forth at the head of the list in all her pontifical pride, and claims to be the mother and mistress of all other churches; and around her are gathered her brood of mystic daughters, who are trying to pluck the laurels from the brow of their



mother; and, at the same time, other newly-hatched ecclesiastical fledglings are attempting to soar into the heavens to divide dignity and honors with their more ancient rivals.

Every few years gives birth to some mighty intellectual giant whose powers are brought into requisition in attempting to purify some of the polluted streams of Popery, and thereby prepare a suitable river of salvation. 'They are trying to *reform*, either the old mother of abominations, or some one of her polluted daughters, in order to prepare a bride for Jesus Christ. If they were not wholly skeptical in regard to the perpetuity of the kingdom of Christ, they would not dare to attempt the *reformation* of any part of Antichrist. The *reformers* of false churches have undertaken a work to which God has not called them. They have run without being sent. They might just as well attempt to purify the waters of the Dead Sea. The folly and presumption of such men have certainly reached the superlative degree, from the fact that they ought to know that if the kingdom that Christ set up has apostatized and come to nothing, certainly their reformatations will fare no better. They have overlooked the prophetic declarations concerning the fate of mystic Babylon — the Church of Rome; for, instead of being *reformed*, she is doomed by the Word of God to utter destruction. Her body is to be burned with fire, and her overthrow is to be as when a mighty mill-stone is cast with violence into the sea.

The Church of Rome, as an organization, has never been, is not now, and never will be a church of Christ. She did not originate with the Church of Christ. She is of her father, the Devil. It is very important, however,



with the Protestant churches, to show that the Romish Church either has been, or is now, the true Church of Christ visible; otherwise all their own claims to be true churches would be null and void, as emanating from the corrupt fountain of a false church. Mr. J. L. Waller shows the utter fallacy of the claims to have *reformed* the Church

of Rome, as follows: "We take the Reformers at their word; and from this favorite passage of theirs, we insist that

*Baptists not Protestants*, pp. 16, 17.

the Romanish Church was never the Church of Christ visible, and was never to be reformed. The first appearance this church makes in prophetic vision, she bears the name of, 'Mystery, Babylon the Great, the Mother of Harlots and abominations of the earth.' She reels, intoxicated with the blood of the saints. She has no prior history. The prophet saw her beginning; the name she then bore; he contemplated her career, and beheld her overthrow. She was the same miserable, cruel, unholy, drunken ecclesiastical bawd, from first to last. There is no intimation to justify the conclusion that 'the bride, the Lamb's wife,' ever degenerated into the 'whore of Babylon,' making all nations drunk with the wine of her fornication; and much less is there anything in this chapter to favor the conclusion that 'Babylon the Great,' by a mere change of the exterior appearances, is to be transformed into the 'New Jerusalem.' On the contrary, John was permitted to see her destruction, like a great mill-stone cast into the sea, and to hear the shouts of glad angels, saying: 'Babylon the Great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitations of Devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.' Does this teach reformation? Is this the purgation which is to transmute the





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



of church and state occurred in the year 312, under the Emperor Constantine. This statement is not strictly correct. The union effected by Constantine, in the year 312, was between the corrupt church and the state, or empire. The true Church of Christ has never entered into an adulterous union with the civil power. After the consolidation of what is usually called the church with the civil dominion, under Constantine as the head of both church and state, the progress of corruption was frightful.

On this point Mr. Dowling says: "Soon after Constantine professed conversion to Christianity, he undertook to remodel the government of the church, so as to make it conform as much as possible to the government of the state. Hence the origin of the dignities of patriarchs, exarchs, archbishops, canons, prebendaries, etc., intended by the Emperor to correspond with the different secular offices and dignities connected with the civil administration of the empire." The same writer further remarks: "From this time onward, the progress of priestly domination and tyranny was far more rapid than in any previous age. The lofty title of Patriarch was assumed by the bishops of Rome, Alexandria, Antioch, and Jerusalem, and also of Constantinople, after the removal of the seat of empire to that city: claiming, according to Bingham (*Antiquities*, B. II, ch. 17), 'the right to ordain all the metropolitans of their own diocese; to call diocesan synods, and to preside over them; to receive appeals from metropolitan and provincial synods; to censure metropolitans and their suffragan bishops; to pronounce absolutions upon great criminals, and to be absolute and independent, one of an other.'" And thus we might con-

*Dowling's His. of Romanism, p. 31.*

*His. Rom., p. 31.*



---

tinue to cite authorities to show the increasing corruption of that false church which originated from the *apostasy*, after the middle of the third century. It is the history of this corrupt antichristian apostasy which is given to the world as *the history of the church* ! It is altogether a misnomer to call the apostasy the Church of Christ, in any sense: it is the synagogue of Satan. As an organization, it had its origin in the third century, out of the apostasy from the truth. We will note the progress of this mystery of iniquity in the next period. It is evident from the Word of God, and church history, that the true Church is not to be found enveloped in the apostasy with Antichrist; we must, therefore, look for the kingdom of Christ somewhere else.



## CHAPTER XVII.

## THE WALDENSEAN PERIOD—1260 YEARS.

1. THE PROPHETIC HISTORY OF THE CHURCH DURING THIS PERIOD.
2. THE PECULIARITIES APPLIED TO THE WALDENSES.
3. FALSE CHURCHES WHICH AROSE DURING THIS PERIOD.

## SECTION I.—THE PROPHETIC HISTORY OF THE CHURCH DURING THIS PERIOD.

“And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.” *Rev. 12: 14.* I do not claim that the true churches are known in history by the name Waldenses during the entire period of twelve hundred and sixty years; but they were called Waldenses the most of this time; and it is generally admitted that the churches which became known as Waldenses in the eleventh century, existed previously in the valleys of the Alps, with the same leading characteristics; and that the same class of people existed in the valleys, as the true witnesses of Christ, during the twelve hundred and sixty years. I will, therefore, take the privilege, as several historians have done, of applying the term *Waldenses* to the entire prophetic period of the preservation of the woman in the wilderness, or during the sackcloth testimony of the Church.

Nearly all historians are agreed that the true church,





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



the dragon power. I am fully satisfied that the Waldensean period of the church, during her retirement in the wilderness, is the purest part of her history since the apostolic age. In the wilderness she had less inducements to conformity with the world. She was persecuted by the dragon while she prophesied in sackcloth during this wilderness period. When it is said, the woman, or church, fled into the wilderness, the term wilderness in this prophecy indicates more than the locality in a waste and desert country. It also refers, doubtless, to the darkness, obscurity, or barrenness, of the dark ages. Owing to the relentless persecution waged against the church by the dragon, very few materials for church history, except from enemies, have been preserved. I understand that the flight of the woman into the wilderness has reference to the retirement of the main body of the Novatians from Italy about the beginning of the fifth century; and also to the retirement of the church into obscurity, so as to be lost sight of, as the true church, by the world and the great mass of historians. Any church whose history has not been involved in obscurity and doubt, can lay no claims whatever to be the true church which fled into the wilderness. The fact that the world did not recognize the claims of the Waldenses, is no evidence whatever that they were not the witnesses for Christ. In the time of Christ and the apostles, the entire world, both Jew and Gentile, except a few, repudiated the claims of the kingdom of Jesus Christ. And even at the present time the world rejects with contempt the claims of the true church.

Historians differ somewhat in regard to the precise time when the church made her flight into the wilderness. Some think it occurred in the time of Constantine the great,



about the year 325; others think it took place about the year 270, and some think it occurred at an earlier date. It is admitted that there were settlements of true Christians formed in the valleys of the Alps in very early times, probably in the apostolic age; and others emigrated, from time to time, under the various persecutions, and took shelter in these mountain retreats; but from all the light which I can gather, I am satisfied that the true date of the flight of the woman into the wilderness was not before the year 413, when banishment and death was decreed against the Novatians on account of their "*re-baptizing*" those who came from the Catholics. This view is sustained by Mr. Orchard, as follows: "In the fourth Lat-  
eran council, canons were made to banish  
them (the Novatians) as heretics, and these  
canons were supported by an edict, in 413, issued by the emperors Theodosius and Honorius, declaring that all persons *re-baptized*, and the *re-baptizers*, should be both punished with death. Accordingly, Albanus, a zealous minister, with others, were punished with death, for *re-baptizing*. The edict was probably obtained by the influence of Augustine, who could endure no rival, nor would he bear with any who questioned the virtue of his rites, or the sanctity of his brethren, or the soundness of the Catholic creed; and these points being disputed by the Novatianists and Donatists, two powerful and extensive bodies of dissidents in Italy and Africa, they were consequently made to feel the weight of his influence. These combined modes of oppression led the faithful to abandon the cities, and seek retreats in the country, which they did; particularly in the valleys of Piedmont, the inhabitants of which began to be called *Waldenses*." About this time a series

*Orch. Bapt. His.,*  
p. 60.



of persecutions were inaugurated against the Novatians in Italy, and they soon retired in vast numbers into the valleys of Piedmont and other places of security; so, we may safely conclude that the woman, the church, was in the wilderness as early as *four hundred and twenty-five or six*.

These persecutions are stated as follows: "In 412 the Baptists were banished as heretics. In 413 *Orch. Bapt. His.*, Innocent sent letters of advice to various *p. 61; note.* ministers. In the same year, the Baptists, for re-baptizing, were sentenced to death. In 416 a council at Mela *accursed* all those who denied forgiveness to accompany infant baptism, and in 418 a council at Carthage enforced the same curse." And not long after the inauguration of this dreadful series of persecutions against the Novatians, says Mr. Orchard, "These holy people now retired from public notice."

We may safely commence the Waldensean period as early as the year *four hundred and twenty-six*. It is true, that all the Novatians had not departed from Italy; but the main body of these people had retired to the valleys of the Alps and other places of retreat. It must be remembered that a remnant of these people still remained in Italy; and a succession of them continued, for centuries, under the name Paterines. As already intimated, the prominent facts concerning the flight of the church, are brought to view in the twelfth chapter of Revelations, by means of the woman as a symbol of the church. The reader is requested to pause and read that chapter. It is

*Rev. 12: 7-9.* said, in verse seventh: "And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, and prevailed not; neither was their place found





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



tion, and the union of the corrupt church and state. Certainly this union of church and state with all the Romish idolatries has been a “Wo to the inhabitants of the earth and the sea.” I am driven to these conclusions, from the fact that the “war in heaven” and the *casting out of the dragon* comes *before* the flight of the woman. And the drawing down of “the third part of the stars of heaven” by the tail of the dragon, doubtless has reference to the departure of the third part of the ministry which followed the dragon when he was cast down to the earth.

We now proceed to sum up the prophetic proofs which show that the true church was preserved during the wilderness period of her history.

*First:* As already seen, she was fed in the wilderness for twelve hundred and sixty years, from the face of the dragon. But if the church apostatized, or became extinct, this Scripture could not be true; but as this prophecy is true, therefore the succession or perpetuity of the church, through this dark period, is established beyond the possibility of a doubt.

*Second:* The Lord said by the angel: “And I will give  
*Rev. 11: 3.* power unto my two witnesses, and they shall  
 prophesy a thousand two hundred and three  
 score days clothed in sackcloth.” If these witnesses refer to the testimony borne by the church in the wilderness, and this is generally believed, then the church remained firm in her prophesying or teaching through the entire period of her stay in the wilderness.

*Third:* It is affirmed by Daniel the prophet, that: “In  
*Dan. 2: 44.* the days of these kings shall the God of  
 heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never  
 be destroyed; and the kingdom shall not be left to other



people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever." And as this prophecy is admitted to refer to the kingdom or church of Christ, it, therefore, sustains the doctrine of church succession or perpetuity. This is also illustrated by the stone which symbolized the kingdom, that smote the image and broke it to pieces, and finally "became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth." The stone kingdom did not become extinct; neither has it been given to other people; but "it shall stand forever."

*Fourth:* Once more; the Savior himself declared, that "Upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it." No one who believes the Word of God can reasonably doubt the existence of the true church ever since it was first established. But the same prophetic Word which teaches the perpetuity of the church, also teaches that the church went into obscurity, where she remained twelve hundred and sixty years. This doctrine is also taught in the prophetic Song of Solomon, which points out the tender relations existing between Jesus Christ, the Bridegroom, and the church, his bride, by the intimate relations existing between the husband and wife. Jesus, the Bridegroom, speaking to the bride, his church, says: "Oh my dove, thou art in the clefts of the rock, in the secret places of the stairs, let me see thy countenance, let me hear thy voice: for sweet is thy voice, and thy countenance is comely." This tender expression of the bridegroom, representing the bride as in *the cleft of the rock, in the secret places of the stairs*, doubtless points out the history of the church during her wilderness obscurity, while secreted in the cleft or stairs of the Alpine

*Song of Solomon, 2: 14.*



mountains. The bridegroom also represents her as his “undefiled,” fair one, which shows that the church remained uncorrupted and pure during her wilderness testimony. And the Savior also represents her as sustaining the same character, when she comes out of the wilderness ;

*Song of Solomon,*  
2: 10-13. for he says : “Rise up, my love, my fair one, and come away : for, lo, the winter is

passed, and the rain is over and gone ; the flowers appear on the earth ; the time of the singing of birds is come, and the voice of the turtle is heard in our land ; the fig tree putteth forth her green figs, and the vines with the tender grape give a good smell. Arise, my love, my fair one, and come away.” Thus we have the tender expression of the bridegroom calling to his beloved, the church, after the fearful winter of darkness and persecution had poured forth frightful storms upon her for twelve hundred and sixty years, to rise up and *come away* out of the wilderness, where her power may again be felt throughout the world.

Again : We have the inspired description of the bride as she comes out of the wilderness. The question is pro-

*Song of Solomon,*  
8: 5, and 6: 10. pounded : “Who is this that cometh up from the wilderness, leaning upon her beloved ?” “Who is she that looketh forth

as the morning, fair as the moon, clear as the sun, and terrible as an army with banners ?” The answer would come, she is the bride, the Lamb’s wife, to whom had been given the wings of the great eagle, with which to fly into the wilderness to the place prepared of God, and where she had ever leaned upon the strong arm of her divine lover, who leads her forth from the wilderness as fair as the moon, as clear as the sun, and as terrible as an army





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



forth from the secret places of the stairs all the time. And with equal propriety it might be affirmed that the Atlantic telegraph cable was broken into a thousand fragments, or that hundreds of miles of it are entirely wanting, because it is invisible to the eye, as to affirm that the church was destroyed because it was hid from some! But when it is known that both ends of the cable are visible, and that the same electric fluid passes from one extremity to the other, no one doubts the succession of the Atlantic cable. And when we consider that the church entered the wilderness bearing the impress of the Holy Spirit, and emerged from it bearing the same impress, we have the evidence of her perpetuity. But we are not left in total darkness with regard to the wilderness period of the church. As already seen, we have the light of the prophetic Word, as the pillar of fire by night, which has pointed out the history of the *everlasting kingdom* through the wilderness period. It is true, that like the ancient pillar of fire, it is light to spiritual Israel, but darkness to the spiritual Egyptians, the enemies of the church. If all uninspired history was a total blank, or swallowed up in the gulf of oblivion, we have a perfect right to span the chasm with the prophetic Word, and boldly affirm that the gates of hell have not prevailed against the church of Jesus Christ. But besides the inspired Word, we have the testimony of *friends*, and even *foes*, to the perpetuity of the kingdom of God through all this dark period of the world. The history of the church may be traced by the dismal light of her martyr fires, and the blood of her witnesses, which has been poured forth like rivers in the desert. The blood-thirsty foes of the church have borne, with fiendish hate, their testimony to the true church in their accusations and charges against



her members. Truly, God has caused the wrath of man to praise him. Even old Rome herself has been constrained to bear, through her executioners, grim and bloody testimony to the truth of the claims of the suffering saints who died as members of the true kingdom of God.

---

## SECTION II.—THE PECULIARITIES APPLIED TO THE WALDENSES.

“And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and three score days.” *Rev. 12: 6.*

Before we proceed to apply the Baptist peculiarities to the Waldensés, it may not be amiss to state again that the same class of people who were called Waldenses in the valleys of the Alps, were called by other names in other countries. But, says Mr. Jones: “All these branches, however, sprang from one common stock, and were animated by the same religious and moral principles.” We have not space in the present work to vindicate every branch of the Waldensean family from the slanderous charges which their enemies have preferred against them; but we desire to apply the Bible peculiarities to the main body of the Waldenses who inhabited the valleys of the Alps, or were in fellowship with them. But before we proceed to this, it may be interesting to furnish the reader with a description of the valleys of Piedmont.

Mr. Jones gives the following description: “The principality of Piedmont derives its name from the circumstance of its being situated at the foot of the Alps, a prodigious

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
p. 188.



range of mountains, the highest indeed in Europe, and which divide Italy from France, Switzerland, and Germany. It is bounded on the east by the duchies of Milan and Montferrat; on the south by the county of Nice and the territory of Genoa; on the west by France, and on the north by Savoy. In former times it constituted a part of Lombardy, but more recently has been subject to the King of Sardinia, who takes up his residence at Turin, the capital of this province, and one of the finest cities in Europe. It is an extensive tract of rich and fruitful valleys, embosomed in mountains which are encircled again with mountains higher than they, intersected with deep and rapid rivers, and exhibiting in strong contrast the beauty and plenty of Paradise in sight of frightful precipices, wide lakes of ice, and stupendous mountains of never-wasting snow. The whole country is an interchange of hill and dale, mountain and valley—traversed with four principal rivers—viz: the Po, the Tanaro, the Stura, and the Dora, besides about eight and twenty rivulets, great and small, which, winding their course in different directions, contribute to the fertility of the valleys, and make them resemble a watered garden. The principal valleys are Aosta and Susa on the north, Stura on the south, and, in the interior of the country, Lucerna, Angrogna, Raccapiatti, Pramol, Perosa, and S. Martino. The valley Clusone, or Pragela, as it is often called, was in ancient times a part of the province Dauphiny in France, and has been, from the days of Hannibal, the ordinary route of the French and other armies when marching into Italy. Angrogna, Pramol, and S. Martino, are strongly fortified by nature, on account of their many difficult passes, and bulwarks of rocks and mountains; as if the All-wise Creator, says Sir





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



succession) from the apostles themselves; they very solemnly created three of our ministers bishops, conferring upon them the power of ordaining ministers, though they did not think fit to take upon them the name of bishops, because of the antichristian abuse of that name — contenting themselves with the name of elders.” This very important passage shows that the Waldenses claimed an *uninterrupted succession* from the apostles. Were they liable to the charge of “*Popish succession?*” By no means; for their bitter en-

*Quoted in Allix's  
Churches of Pied-  
mont, p. 209.*

emy says that: “They affirm that they alone are the Church of Christ, and his disciples. They declare themselves to be

the apostles’ successors; to have apostolic authority, and the keys of binding and loosing. They hold the Church of Rome to be the whore of Babylon, and that all that obey her are damned, especially the clergy that are subject to her since the time of Pope Sylvester.” It has ever been the case, that those who have claimed the true succession, have borne the most faithful testimony against the false succession of Rome. In a Waldensean Confession of Faith published in 1655, article twenty-

*Perrin's His. of  
Waldenses, p. 295.*

fourth reads as follows: “That God has gathered together a church in this world for the salvation of mankind; but she

has but one head and foundation, which is Jesus Christ.” And we have article twenty-sixth, as follows: “That this church can not fail, or be quite destroyed; but that it will always remain.” It has been already observed, that the same class of people called Waldenses in the valleys, were called Paterines, especially in Italy. This name dates back to the Novatians. Dr. Allix says of them, that: “It appears that the Berengarians, who were of the



same stamp with Paterines, did discourse much at the same rate as the Waldenses did afterward.

This is evident from Lanfranc, where he tells us that they accused the church to have erred by reason of ignorance, and that the church remained in their party alone; and they, with the Berengarians, called the Church of Rome *the congregation of the wicked and the seat of Satan.*” Thus these early Waldenses maintained that themselves alone were the true Church of Christ; that they had the true succession; and that Rome is Antichrist. The bitterest foes of the Waldenses have never charged them with holding any other founder and head than Jesus Christ. We may consider it a settled point that the Waldenses possessed the Baptist peculiarity which recognizes Jesus Christ alone as the founder and head of his Church.

*Second:* The Baptists regard the Bible alone as their rule of faith and practice; and, upon examination, it will be found that the Waldenses also possessed the same peculiarity. No historic fact is more clearly developed than that the Waldenses adhered with unyielding tenacity to the Scriptures as their only guide in matters of religion. Æneassylvius, who came to be Pope Pius II., gives the following in his account of the Waldenses: “Whatsoever is preached without Scripture proof, they account no better than fables. That the Holy Scriptures is of the same efficacy in the vulgar tongue as in Latin, and accordingly they communicate and administer the sacraments in the vulgar tongue. They can say a great part of the Old and New Testament by heart.” This acknowledgment of Pope Pius concerning this peculiar feature of the Wal-

*Allix's Churches of  
Piedmont, p. 134.*

*Quoted in Dr. Al-  
lix's Churches of  
Piedmont, p. 236.*



denses, is but the voice of history on this point: the Waldenses claim no other standard of faith and practice except the Bible. To the same effect Mr. Robinson testifies of the Waldenses, as follows: "From the Church of Rome

*Rob.'s Eccl. Res.,* they distinguish themselves by reducing,  
p. 461. as they supposed, the ancient Roman doctrine to practice, by rejecting the Pope

the prelates, and all the religious orders, by renouncing councils, fathers, and all traditions, and adhering to Scripture alone as a rule of faith, and by refusing all the papal ceremonies of baptism, the Lord's Supper, penance, orders, and so on. They are also distinguished from the latter Vaudois, and the reformed churches, by not using any liturgy; by not compelling faith; by condemning parochial churches; by not taking oaths; by allowing every person, even women, to teach; by not practicing infant baptism; by not admitting god-fathers; by rejecting all sacerdotal habits; by denying all ecclesiastical orders of priesthood, papal and episcopal; by not bearing arms; and by their abhorrence of every species of persecution." Once more:

We introduce the testimony of a minister who had been pastor of one of the Waldensean churches for forty years; his name is *Vignaux*. He says of the Waldenses: "That

*Quoted in Jones' Ch. His.,* the Holy Scriptures contain all that is  
p. 264. necessary to our salvation, and that we are called to believe only what they teach,

without any regard to the authority of man; that nothing else ought to be received by us except what God hath commanded." And it is an interesting fact, that the ancient Waldenses were mighty in the Scriptures; they surpassed all others in Bible knowledge. Mr. Jones quotes Thuanus, an eminent Catholic historian, as making the





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



faith comes from the gracious and efficacious operations of the Holy Spirit, which illuminates our souls, and enables them to rely upon the mercy of God, to be applied by the merits of Jesus Christ.” Every one must know that this faith, which is produced by the influence of the Holy Spirit upon the heart, must follow, in point of order, repentance; but, as the order of repentance and faith has never been a matter of dispute in the history of the Waldenses, we pass to the next point, which is their teaching that faith precedes baptism.

This point is fully settled in chapter sixth of this book, where the charge that the Waldenses baptized infants, is fully met. I will, however, introduce some proofs in regard to the teaching of the Paterines, who were the same with the ancient Waldenses. Dr. Allix says: “We find the Berengarians exposed to the same calumnies which were afterward imputed to the Paterines and Waldenses. This is evident from the discourse of Guimondus, Bishop of Aversa, lib. I, *contra Bereng.*; where he accuseth them of overthrowing, as much as in them lay, lawful marriages, and the baptism of infants.” It is true that Dr. Allix, the Pedobaptist historian, calls this charge against the Paterines a *calumny*. But it is certain that the Catholic writers who lived at the same time and in the same countries with the Paterines, knew more about their practice than Dr. Allix, who lived in the present century. And as to the other charge—that these Paterines rejected lawful marriage—they did reject what Catholics call lawful marriage, viz: marriage by Catholic priests. Historians are agreed that the Catholics did charge the ancient Waldenses and

*Perrin's His. of  
Vaudois, p. 295.*

*Allix's Churches of  
Piedmont, p. 135.*



Paterines—who were, really, the same class of people religiously—with the rejection of infant baptism.

On this point Mr. Robinson says: “As the Catholics of those times baptized by immersion, the Paterines, by what name soever they were called—as Manicheans, Gazari, Josephists,

*Rob.'s Eccl. Res.,*  
p. 408.

Arnoldists, Passagines, Bulgarians, or Bougres—made no complaint of the mode of baptizing; but, when they were examined, they objected vehemently against the baptism of infants, and condemned it as an error. They said, among other things, that a child knew nothing of the matter—that he had no desire to be baptized, and was incapable of making any confession of faith, and that the willing and professing of another could be of no service to him.” This quotation shows that the ancient Waldenses, also called Paterines, positively opposed infant baptism; they held the Baptists’ order of faith before baptism. It is a historic fact, that the ancient Waldenses, from the time of the flight of the woman into the wilderness, to the close of the twelve hundred and sixty years, bore testimony to the Bible order of faith prior to baptism. And as no one has ever dared to charge them with the gross absurdity of placing the Lord’s Supper before baptism, we may justly conclude that the Waldenses preserved the Bible order of the commandments—Repentance, Faith, Baptism, and the Lord’s Supper. Thus we find that the Waldenses possessed the third Baptist peculiarity, and, therefore, they were Baptists in this respect.

*Fourth: Baptists immerse, or bury with Christ in baptism, only those who profess to be dead to, or freed from, sin.*

We now proceed to the examination of the Waldenses as regards the fourth Bible peculiarity. After the rise of



the Arian controversy, the Catholics originated the practice of trine immersion. In baptism, they dipped the candidate once in the name of the Father, once in the name of the Son, and once in the name of the Holy Ghost.

But the Waldenses adhered to the apostolic practice of "one baptism." They buried in baptism only once those who professed to be dead to sin. They were charged, it is true, with Anabaptism, or re-baptism, which they denied, on the ground that even the immersions performed by false churches were invalid, and not baptism at all. The suffering Waldenses, in their supplication to Emanuel, Duke of Savoy, used the following language: "The Turks,

*His. Wald., Amer. S. S. U., p. 77.* Jews, Saracens, and other nations, though never so barbarous, are suffered to enjoy their own religion, and are constrained by no man to change their manner of living and worship; and we, who serve and worship in faith the true and Almighty God, and one true and only Sovereign, the Lord Jesus, and confessing one God and one baptism,—shall not we be suffered to enjoy the same privileges?"

The point has already been fully established, that the Waldenses baptized none except professed believers. And they considered a true believer as a child of God; therefore they did not baptize sinners, the children of the Devil, in order to make them children of God; they baptized those who professed to be dead to, or freed from, sin. In a Confession of Faith published by the Waldenses in the year 1120, we have the following: "ART. XII.—We do

*Israel of the Alps, Muston, p. 300.* believe that the sacraments are signs of the holy thing, or visible forms of the invisible grace, accounting it good that the faithful sometimes use the said signs or visible forms, if it may





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



Antichrist; it is, therefore, certain that they only baptized such as professed to be real saints, or children of God. We have the testimony of Evervinus, a Catholic writer of the twelfth century, that the ancient Waldenses rejected infant baptism. He wrote a letter to St. Bernard concerning the Waldenses about Cologne, in which he represents them as follows: “Thus they make void the priesthood of the church, and condemn the sacraments besides baptism only; and this only in those who are come to age, who, they say, are baptized by Christ himself, whosoever be the minister of the sacraments. They do not believe infant baptism; alleging that place of the Gospel, *whosoever shall believe, and be baptized, shall be saved.*” But enough on this point; it is a point fully proved that the ancient Waldenses baptized only those who professed to be true believers, or those who professed to be dead to sin. But did they immerse, or bury in baptism, their converts? It is conceded by historians that immersion was the prevailing practice of all denominations which professed Christianity down to the thirteenth century. The exceptions to this practice were, that in cases of sickness the Catholics performed what has been called “clinic baptism”—by affusion; but they did not plead Scripture authority for this departure from apostolic practice; they only pleaded necessity. But as the Waldenses adhered to the Scriptures, rejecting all the traditions of men, they did not adopt this innovation. And, according to their doctrine, there was no necessity for clinic baptism; for they rejected baptismal salvation, which gave rise to the custom of the baptism of the sick to save them from the torments of hell. It is admitted by candid historians and learned Pedobaptists that sprinkling

*Allix's Churches  
of Pied., p. 157.*



or pouring is a Romish tradition, and as the Waldenses regarded these traditions with abhorrence, they, therefore, rejected the traditions of sprinkling and pouring instead of baptism. Even those societies which adopted the practice of infant baptism continued the ancient practice of immersion; for they immersed their infants, mostly with three dips. Dr. Wall, the celebrated Pedobaptist historian, speaking of the introduction of pouring and sprinkling, remarks: "And though the English received not this custom till after the decay of Popery, yet they have since received

*His. of Inf. Bapt.,  
vol. I, p. 728.*

it from such neighboring nations as had begun it in the times of the Pope's power. But all other Christians in the world, who never owned the Pope's usurped power, do, and ever did, dip their infants in the ordinary use."

Again, in speaking of the administration of baptism among the ancients, Dr. Wall says: "Their general and ordinary way was to baptize by immersion, or dip-

ping the person, whether it were an infant or grown man or woman, into the water.

*His. of Inf. Bapt.,  
vol. I, p. 706.*

This is so plain and clear, by an infinite number of passages, that, as one can not but pity the weak endeavors of such Pedobaptists as would maintain the negative of it, so also we ought to disown and show a dislike of the profane scoffs which some people give to the English Anti-pedobaptists merely for their use of dipping. It is one thing to maintain that that circumstance is not absolutely necessary to the essence of baptism, and another to go about to represent it as ridiculous and foolish, or as shameful and indecent, when it was, in all probability, the way by which our blessed Savior, and for certain, was the most usual and ordinary way by which the ancient Christians did receive



their baptism. I shall not stay to produce the particular proofs of this. Many of the quotations which I brought for other purposes, and shall bring, do evince it. It is a great want of prudence, as well as of honesty, to refuse to grant to an adversary what is certainly true, and may be proved so. It creates a jealousy of all the rest that one says." From these passages from this eminent historian, it is evident that the prevailing custom among ancient Christians was an immersion or burial in baptism; and the only exception to this was found among Roman Catholics in favor of sick people. But as the Waldenses neither originated with the Catholics nor received their traditions, therefore they did not receive sprinkling or pouring, but held the burial in baptism of those who were believers. Reinerius Saccho, the Catholic persecutor of the Waldenses, says of them, that: "They hold that none of the ordinances of the church which have been introduced since Christ's ascension, ought to be observed, as being of no value." It is well known that sprinkling and pouring for baptism have been introduced long since the ascension of Christ; and as the Waldenses rejected all such ordinances, therefore they rejected sprinkling or pouring for baptism. The fact that the Waldenses baptized all whom they received into fellowship, even when they had been previously immersed by others, is positive proof that the Waldenses practiced immersion or burial in baptism. Those parties who are so indifferent about the commands of Jesus Christ as to practice sprinkling and pouring for baptism, do not insist on the baptism of those that come from other parties; they are, therefore, not called Anabaptists. It may be laid down as an historic axiom, that *where Anabaptism prevails,*

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
p. 239.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



those human inventions which are a trouble or prejudice to the liberty of the spirit." Thus we find the ancient Waldenses, like the modern Baptists, contending for spirit or "soul-liberty." It will be remembered that the Albigenses were a branch or a part of the Waldensan family; they held the same doctrine in every point of church organization. In regard to the point in question, Mr.

*His. of Eng. Baptists*, p. 116. Orchard remarks: "The errors of the Albigenses, who, in their church capacity, says Collier, had none but lay brethren to

officiate among them, and who professed equality in the brotherhood, began now to grow more public." As to the charge, that the Albigenses had none but lay brethren for preachers, this must be understood with reference to Catholic views; for they regarded all as laymen who had not received Romish ordination. The Waldenses had pastors ordained by themselves. It is so generally admitted that the ancient Waldenses recognized the equality of their membership, as regards church privileges, that it is unnecessary to occupy much space on this point. In the ancient Waldensan documents preserved by Leger, and quoted by Monastier in his History of the Vaudois Church,

*His. of the Vaudois Church*, p. 95. we have the following: "'Among other powers which God has given his servants, he has given them power to choose leaders

(pastors) who may govern the people, and to appoint elders to their offices, according to the diversity of their employments, in the unity of Christ, as the apostle proves in his epistle to Titus.' \* \* \* As to the discipline of pastors, it is said: 'Whenever any one of our pastors has fallen into any disgraceful sin, he is expelled from our society, and the office of preaching is taken from him.' As to their support,



it is said: 'Our food and clothing are supplied and given to us gratuitously, and in the way of alms, as much as is needed, by the good people whom we teach.' The barbes, moreover, all applied themselves to some useful art, particularly medicine and surgery. No hierarchical distinction was established: the only difference that existed between the pastors was that arising from age, or services performed, and personal respect."

In this quotation, it should be observed, that it was the servants of God, members of his church, who were to choose leaders or elders to the pastorate, and exclude them from the church if they proved unworthy; and the only difference that existed between the pastors was that arising from age, services performed, and personal respect. The same author further remarks: "We conceive that this entire submissiveness of the younger barbes (pastors) to the more aged and to the leaders, has led Roman Catholic authors into an error, and made them believe that the Vaudois had a clerical hierarchy, like themselves, of bishops, etc. But nothing in their history or writings authorizes us to believe in the existence of any other distinction among the barbes excepting that of age, experience, and personal qualities, which determined their choice of leaders as circumstances might require—as is still practiced, and, no doubt, was always practiced in this church." It may be regarded as an established historic fact, that the ancient Waldenses possessed the Baptist peculiarity of religious equality in church membership. Dupin, the Catholic historian, admits that Reinerius Saccho, the inquisitor, charged the Waldenses with holding, "that all the members of the church

*His. of the Vaudois Church*, p. 102.

*Dupin's Ch. His.*, vol. II., p. 148.



are equal;" and "that the washing (baptizing) of infants is of no avail to them; that the sureties do not understand what they answer to the priest."

This religious equality among the Waldenses grows out of their fundamental principles of taking the Bible alone as their guide, and claiming no founder and head but Jesus Christ. Some have supposed that the Waldenses carried this principle of equality to an extreme in allowing the women to teach and pray in the congregations. But it should be remembered, that this was allowed in the church at Corinth in the time of Paul, on condition that it be done with the head covered or veiled. And it was especially necessary among the Waldenses, owing to the fact, that in those fearful times of persecution the women could gain access where the pastors could not go. History shows that often the devout Waldensean women went out, two and two, on foot, as missionaries, to teach from house to house, in their quiet way, the Gospel of salvation. And to avoid detection by the Catholic emissaries, they usually took with them a basket of small wares or trinkets to sell; but when the opportunity came, they would read and expound the Scriptures to the deluded Catholics and other sinners.

*Sixth: Baptists observe the Lord's Supper at his table in his kingdom.* It will also be found that the ancient Waldenses possessed this peculiarity also. For the discussion of the communion question, the reader is referred to chapter thirteenth of this work. The Waldenses were often called *Puritans*, because of their strenuous advocacy of purity in doctrine and communion. At the beginning of the sixteenth century the Catholic clergy instigated Uladislaus, King of Bohemia, to issue an edict to force the





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



would not receive to their fellowship and communion those who had been baptized by other parties. As already remarked, all those who practiced *Anabaptism* were also strict in their communion. Mr. Orchard remarks, on this

*S. Bapt. Review*,  
p. 121. point: "The Albigenses prevailed in the south of France. These people admitted those only to the Lord's Supper who had

been immersed (Mezeray,) after fasting and prayer."

These Albigenses were the same with the Waldenses on all points of church organization. They were really a part of the same religious community. They were strict in communion. Those called Petrobrusians were ancient

Waldenses. Mr. Orchard says that, "Peter de Bruys

*S. Bapt. Review*,  
p. 121. and his followers declared all baptisms null unless given to believers. They re-

baptized all proselytes, and were anti-pedobaptists. They were very strict." Again: of the

Waldenses, Mr. Orchard remarks: "They were Scriptural, or strict communion Baptists, so far as communities can be discov-

ered among them." No historian, known to me, has ever

dared to assert that the ancient witnessing Waldenses

were *open communionists*. During nearly all the period

of the twelve hundred and sixty years of their testimony

there were no modern Protestants for them to commune

with; and when the Reformation of the sixteenth cen-

tury occurred, the strict Waldenses had no more fellow-

ship for them than they had for the Catholics. During

*eleven hundred years* of the sackcloth testimony of the

Waldenses, there were no Lutherans, no Episcopalians,

no Presbyterians, and, of course, no Methodists, to tempt

them to deviate from the laws of Jesus Christ in regard



to the Supper. Will any one so far stultify himself as to affirm that these ancient sufferers held religious communion with the Romish *apostasy*?

The Waldenses regarded all the Catholic worship as the grossest idolatry; they did not, therefore, commune with Antichrist. They boldly affirmed that the Church of Rome is the “whore of Babylon;” and any communion with her they regarded as spiritual fornication—an unspeakable abomination. For repudiating the Romish communion, with all her abominable superstitions, the Waldenses suffered untold persecutions through all the dark ages of popish rule. Yes: these ancient Waldensean Baptists, as a denomination, raised the only standard of opposition and protest against the corruptions and blasphemy of the papal dragon during the dark midnight of the world for more than a thousand years before Luther, King Henry, Calvin, and others, raised the standard of rebellion in the Church of Rome, in which mighty religious earthquake a tenth part of the harlot city fell. But, alas! these mighty *reformers* of the sixteenth century, instead of *coming out of* Babylon, as they were commanded, attempted to *reform* that old, polluted, miserable, bloody, debased, cruel, drunken ecclesiastical bawd, in order to prepare a bride for the Lamb of God! And their *reforming* efforts were so tremendous as to shake “Mystery Babylon” to her dark foundations. This brought on her pangs; and amidst her mighty throes, which shook the nations, she brought forth those ecclesiastical organizations called, in the Bible, “HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.” These daughters of the old “Mother and Mistress of Churches” still retain the peculiar characteristic features of the “Mother Church;” for they have all sought,



and entered, when they have had the opportunity, into an adulterous marriage with civil powers. And they, like their mother, have “committed fornication with the kings of the earth.” They, as organizations, have derived their ordinances, their laws, more or less, and their church existence, from Rome. But now they come, dressed up in the garments of reformation, and wish to commune with the bride, the Lamb’s wife! The bride of the Lamb has no more business to affiliate and *commune* with these mystic daughters of Rome than the faithful wife has to become the associate of the abandoned women of earth.

But will it be said that there are some of God’s children in these churches which sprang from Catholicism? May we not commune with them? There are some of God’s children in old Rome herself; but they are commanded to “come out” of her. We are not to go into these human societies to get communion with them. The people of God are required to come out, and *eat and drink* at the Lord’s table in his kingdom. Most persons fail to distinguish between organizations and individuals. Many things may be true of organizations as such, which are not true of the individuals which compose those organizations. It is true, as an organization, that the Church of Rome is represented as the “*Mother of Harlots*;” but this is not true of every individual member of the Catholic church. Individually, there are, in the Church of Rome, many virtuous, honorable, conscientious, high-toned, charitable men and women. And more: I am confident that there are some of God’s dear children in the Romish Babylon. The same, and more, may be said of the churches which came from Catholicism; for the *reformed* churches are improvements on popery. The unchastity of these societies has regard





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



the Most High, and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom.” “And they shall be given into his hands until a time, and times, and the dividing of time.” At the commencement of this chapter it was seen that the decree of the emperors Theodosius and Honorius made death the penalty for re-baptizing. This decree was made against the Novatians, who fled to the valleys of the Alps, and were afterward known as Waldenses. The Paulicians, who are known to have been the Waldenses of the East, suffered the most terrible persecutions under Theodora.

*Orch. Bapt. His.,*  
*vol. I, p. 137.*

Mr. Orchard says: “The severest persecutions experienced by them was encouraged by the Empress Theodora, A.D. 845.

Her decrees were severe, but the cruelty with which they were put in execution by her officers was horrible beyond expression. Mountains and hills were covered with inhabitants. Her sanguinary inquisitors explored cities and mountains in lesser Asia. After confiscating the goods and property of an hundred thousand of these people, the owners to that number were put to death in the most barbarous manner, and made to expire slowly under a variety of the most exquisite tortures. The flatterers of the empress boast of having extirpated in nine years that number of Paulicians.” We have the following account of the persecutions of a company of Waldenses who made their appearance in England in the year 1159: “Toward the

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
*p. 213.*

middle of the twelfth century a small society of these *Puritans*, as they were called by some, or *Waldenses*, as they were termed

by others, or *Paulicians*, as they were denominated by our old monkish historian, William of Newburg, made their appearance in England. This latter writer, speaking



of them, says: 'They came originally from Gascoyne, where, *being as numerous as the sand of the sea*, they sorely infested both France, Italy, Spain, and England.'"

"They were apprehended, and brought before a council of the clergy at Oxford.

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
p. 213.

Being interrogated about their religion, their teacher, named Gerard, a man of learning, answered in their name, that they were Christians, and believed the doctrines of the apostles. Upon a more particular inquiry, it was found that they denied several of the received doctrines of the church, such as purgatory, prayers for the dead, and the invocation of saints; and refusing to abandon these damnable heresies, as they were called, they were condemned as incorrigible heretics, and delivered to the secular arm to be punished. The king (Henry II.), at the instigation of the clergy, commanded them to be branded with a red-hot iron on the forehead, to be whipped through the streets of Oxford, and, having their clothes cut short by their girdles, to be turned into the open fields, all persons being forbidden to afford them any shelter or relief under the severest penalties. This cruel sentence was executed in its utmost rigor; and, it being the depth of winter, all these unhappy persons perished with cold and hunger." Thus we have the record of the sad fate of these thirty Waldenses, men and women, who fled into England from the hands of persecution, only to meet a more fearful doom from the hands of those who professed to be *Christians*. Again: Ildefonsus, the King of Arragon, issued a cruel edict against the Waldenses in the year 1194, in which is contained language as follows:

"Whosoever, therefore, from this day forward, shall presume to receive the said

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
p. 238.



Waldenses and Inzabbati, or any other heretics of whatsoever profession, into their houses, or to be present at their pernicious sermons, or to afford them meat, or any other favor, shall thereby incur the indignation of Almighty God, as well as ours, and have his goods confiscated without the remedy of an appeal, and be punished as if he were actually guilty of high treason.”

Thus we learn, that in Arragon, now Spain, the penalty for giving food, or showing any other favor to the hated Waldenses, was death, as for high treason. What must have been the wrath and indignation against these poor people, when it was considered a crime worthy of death, for even a Catholic to favor one of them with shelter from the storm, a piece of bread, or a cup of cold water? And in this persecution, “The archbishops and bishops of Guienne and other provinces of France, as well as the clergy throughout the different dioceses, were enjoined to banish the Waldenses, Puritans and Paterines from their territories; to mark them, and take care that they should neither enjoy Christian privileges while living, nor burial when dead.”

It might have been supposed, that the Catholic fury would have been satiated with the death of these saints, but not so; they persecuted the mutilated bodies of the dead Waldenses, by denying them the poor privilege of a resting-place in the grave. Is this the religion of Jesus? About the time of the marching of the crusading armies against the Albigenses in the south of France, a public discussion was agreed upon, between the Albigenses and the Catholics, who entered into the discussion under pretense of fairness, in order to detain their unsuspecting





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



puted that a million of persons bearing that name were put to death, had occasioned many of them to cross the Pyrenees, and seek a shelter from the storm in the Spanish provinces of Arragon and Catalonia.”

In regard to the persecutions of the Waldenses in other countries, in the latter part of the thirteenth century, Mr.

*Jones' Ch. His.,* p. 295. Jones says: “In Sicily in particular, the imperial fury raged against them. They

were ordered to be treated with the greatest severity, that they might be banished, not only from the country, but from the earth. And throughout Italy, both Gregory IX. and Honorius IV. harassed and oppressed them with the most unrelenting barbarity, by means of the Inquisition. The living were, without mercy, committed to the hands of the executioner, their houses razed to the ground, their goods confiscated, and even the slumbering remains of the dead were dragged from their graves and their bones committed to the flames.” These persecutions were not the result of the outburst of passion upon the part of inferior officers in the Catholic service; but it seems to have been the settled policy of the Pope, with all his inferior clergy, to eradicate from the Catholic mind and heart every principle of compassion, in order to instigate every son of the church to persecute the Waldenses with the fury of incarnate fiends.

About the year 1400 the Waldensean inhabitants of the valley of Pragela were surprised by the Catholic soldiers. The attack was made upon them in December, when the mountains were covered with snow. As the work of slaughter and death went on in the valley, the remnant of the inhabitants that escaped the fury of the soldiers, perished in the mountain snows. Mr. Jones says, of their



fate: "They fled to one of the highest mountains of the Alps, with their wives and children, the unhappy mothers carrying the cradle in one hand, and with the other leading such of their offspring as were able to walk. Their inhuman invaders, whose feet were swift to shed blood, pursued them in their flight until night came on, and slew great numbers of them before they could reach the mountains. Those that escaped were, however, reserved to experience a fate not more enviable. Overtaken by the shades of night, they wandered up and down the mountains, covered with snow, destitute of the means of shelter from the inclemencies of the weather, or of supporting themselves under it by any of the comforts which Providence has destined for that purpose. Benumbed with cold, they fell an easy prey to the severity of the climate, and, when the night had passed away, there were found in their cradles, or lying upon the snow, four score of their infants deprived of life, many of their mothers also lying dead by their sides, and others just on the point of expiring. During the night their enemies were busily employed in plundering the houses of everything that was valuable, which they conveyed away to Susa. A poor woman belonging to the Waldenses, named Margaret Athode, was next morning found hanging upon a tree." In order to instigate the civil rulers to slaughter the Waldenses as they would ravenous beasts, the Catholic clergy were accustomed to fabricate and circulate the most fabulous slanders and falsehoods concerning these people. They even represented their children as little monsters. The Duke of Savoy, "having been informed that their young children were

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
p. 319.

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
p. 323.



born with black throats; that they were hairy, and had four rows of teeth, with only one eye, and that placed in the middle of the forehead,—he commanded some of them to be brought before him at Pignerol, where, being satisfied by ocular demonstration that the Waldenses were not monsters, he blamed himself for being so easily imposed upon by the clergy of the Catholic Church as to credit such idle report,” etc.

This illustrates the blinding power of “religious” prejudice. In the fifteenth century, when the Waldenses were slaughtered in the valley Loyse, by the command of Pope Innocent VIII., a part of the inhabitants had taken refuge in the caves in the mountains. But the Catholic general discovered their places of retreat, and built large fires in the entrances to the caves; and immense numbers were, in this way, suffocated in their caves: and among

*Jones’ Ch. His.,* the rest, *four hundred children* were “suffocated in their cradles, or in the arms of their dead mothers.” In the early part of

the sixteenth century, the most cruel persecutions continued to be waged against the Waldenses in the south of France; and in the year 1545, John Meinier led the Catholic forces against the Waldenses in Provence, in France. And among other horrid cruelties, this inhuman wretch

*Jones’ Ch. His.,* “shut up about forty women in a barn full of hay and straw, and then set it on fire; and after that, the poor creatures,

having attempted in vain to smother the fire with their clothes, which, for that end, they had pulled off, betook themselves to the great window, at which the hay is commonly pitched up into the barn, with an intention to leap down from thence. But they were kept in with spikes





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



denses have never persecuted others. It is impossible to persecute on Baptist principles. Some have concluded that every church, if it had the power, would persecute and shed the blood of others on the account of religion. This is a mistake. Baptists, though sorely persecuted from generation to generation, have never oppressed, imprisoned, or caused the blood of others to be shed, on the ground of religion. This is one of the strongest proofs that we have the Bible organization.

It has been supposed that the Catholic Church would not now persecute, if she had the power, as she did in former times. This is a mistake; for Rome *now* possesses every element of despotism and persecution that she ever had. In fact, the element of persecution seems to be on the increase with the Catholics; for, in this present year, A. D. 1870, the slight restraint heretofore resting on the Pope from the authority of the General Council, has been removed, and the Pope has been declared *infallible* by the General Council at Rome. And even to this day, the Catholic bishops are sworn, in their oath of consecration,

*Jones' Ch. His.,* to "oppose and persecute heretics to the  
p. 268. utmost of their power." They have re-

garded the Baptists as "heretics" of the deepest cast; they are, therefore, *sworn* to persecute Baptists to the utmost of their power. Modern Baptists are not generally apprised of the great cost at which Baptist principles have been preserved. In the year 1232, at the instigation of Pope Gregory IX., the Emperor Frederick II., "commanded all judges imme-

*His. Wal., A. S.* diately to deliver to the flames every man  
*S. U., p. 57.* who should be convicted of heresy by the bishop of his diocese, and to pull out the tongue of those



to whom the bishop should think it proper to show favor, that they might not corrupt others.'” It was sometimes the custom for the Catholics to cut out the tongues of the Waldenses to prevent their preaching while they were burning at the stake.

But amid all these fearful sufferings God caused the wrath of man to praise him, so that the saying was verified, that “The blood of the martyrs is the seed of the church.” And to the same effect, Mr. Jones remarks that: “Those bloody edicts which were published, those fires which were lighted up, and that variety of torments which priests and inquisitors invented with ingenious cruelty, served in reality to propagate the doctrines against which they were employed, and contributed to inflame, rather than extinguish, that ardent zeal with which the Protestants were animated.”

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
p. 342.

. Near the close of the long period marked as the *Waldensean period*, the Waldenses began to be called Baptists. They had been called *Anabaptists* from the time of Novatian. Cardinal Hosius, a learned Catholic, who was chairman of the Council of Trent, speaking of the Waldensean Baptists, says: “If the truth of religion were to be judged of by the readiness and cheerfulness which a man of any sect shows in suffering, then the opinions and persuasions of *no sect can be truer or surer than those of the Anabaptists*; since there have been none for *these twelve hundred years past* that have been more grievously punished.”

*Bapt. His., Orch.,*  
vol I, p. 364.

Reader, mark the historic fact, that *for twelve hundred years prior to 1570 the Baptists* had suffered the most cruel punishments on account of their principles. This.



can be said of no denomination except the Baptists. Near the close of the Waldensean period, in the year 1655, on the twenty-fifth day of January, Andrew Gastaldo, the Catholic governor under the Duke of Savoy, published a most inhuman “order” against the Waldenses of the valleys of Piedmont. And in this fiendish order of Gas-

*Jones’ Ch. His.,* *after the publication of those presents, to*  
*p. 365. withdraw and depart, and to be, with their*

*families, withdrawn out of the said places, and transported into the places allowed by his royal highness during his good pleasure, etc., under pain of death and confiscation of houses and goods; provided, always, that they do not make it appear to us, within twenty days following, that they are become Catholics, or that they have sold their goods to Catholics.”* This dreadful order required thousands of families to leave all, in the dead of winter, and attempt a flight, over snow-covered mountains, with women and children, sick and infirm, with only three days’ notice to start to seek homes in foreign countries. But before they could get away the Catholics were turned loose on them to slaughter the defenseless Waldenses without mercy. We give the letter written by the Waldenses directly after the dreadful tragedy. They begin this mournful letter by saying:

“Brethren and fathers:—Our tears are no more tears of water, but of blood, which not only obscure our sight,

*Jones’ Ch. His.,* *but oppress our very hearts. Our pen*  
*pp. 366, 367. is guided by a trembling hand, and our*

*minds are distracted by such unexpected alarms, that we are incapable of framing a letter which shall correspond with our wishes, or the strangeness of our*





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



ers, fell upon the poor people with impetuous fury. To all those were added an incalculable number of persons that had been outlawed, prisoners and other offenders, who expected thereby to have saved their souls and filled their purses. And, the better to effect their purposes, the inhabitants were compelled to receive *five or six regiments of the French army*, besides some Irish, to whom, it is reported, our country was promised, with several troops of vagabond persons, under the pretext of coming into the valleys for fresh quarters.

This great multitude, by virtue of a license from the Marquis of Pionessa, instigated by the monks, and enticed and conducted by our wicked and unnatural neighbors, attacked us with such violence on every side, especially in Angrogna, Villare, and Bobbio, and in a manner so horribly treacherous, that in an instant all was one entire scene of confusion, and the inhabitants, after a fruitless skirmish to defend themselves, were compelled to flee for their lives, with their wives and children, and that not merely the inhabitants of the plain, but those of the mountains also. Nor was all their diligence sufficient to prevent the destruction of a very considerable number of them; for in many places, such as Villare and Bobbio, they were so hemmed in on every side, the army having seized on the fort of Mareburg and by that means blocked up the avenue, that there remained no possibility of escape, and nothing was left for them but to be massacred and put to death. In one place, they mercilessly tortured not less than an hundred and fifty women and their children, chopping off the heads of some, and dashing out the brains of others against the rocks; and in regard to those whom they took prisoners, from fifteen years old and upward,



who refused to go to mass, they hanged some, and nailed others to the trees by the feet, with their heads downward. It is reported that they carried some persons of note prisoners to Turin—viz: our poor brother and pastor, M. Gros, with some part of his family. In short, there is neither cattle nor provisions of any kind left in the valley of Lucerne, and it is but too evident that all is lost, since there are some whole districts, especially S. Giovanni and La Torre, where the business of setting fire to our houses and churches was so dexterously managed by a Franciscan friar and a certain priest that they left not so much as one in either place unburnt. In these desolations, the mother has been bereft of her dear child, the husband of his affectionate wife, and those who were once the richest among us are reduced to the necessity of begging their bread, while others still remain weltering in their own blood, and deprived of all the comforts of life. And as to the churches in S. Martino and other places, who, on all former occasions, have been a sanctuary to the persecuted, they have themselves now been summoned to quit their dwellings, and every soul of them to depart, and that instantaneously and without respite, under pain of being put to death; nor is there any mercy to be expected by any of them who are found within the dominions of his royal highness.

The pretext which is alleged for justifying these horrid proceedings is, that we are rebels against the orders of his highness for not having brought the whole city of Geneva within the walls of Mary Magdalene Church, or, in plainer terms, for not having performed an utter impossibility in departing, in a moment, from our houses and homes in Bubbiana, Lucerne, Fenile, Bricheras, La Torre, S. Giovanni, and S. Secondo, and also for having renewed our



repeated supplications to his highness to commiserate our situation, who, while on the one hand he promised us to make no innovations in our lot, on the other refused us permission to depart peaceably out of his dominions, for which we have often entreated him in case he would not allow us to continue and enjoy the liberty of our consciences as his predecessors had always done. True it is, that the Marquis of Pionessa adduced another reason (and we have the original copy of his writing in our possession), which is, that it was his royal highness' pleasure to abase us and humble our pride for endeavoring to shroud ourselves and take sanctuary under the protection of foreign princes and States.

To conclude, our beautiful and flourishing churches are utterly lost, and that without remedy, unless our God work miracles for us. Their time is come, and our measure is full. O, have pity upon the desolations of Jerusalem, and be grieved for the afflictions of Joseph. Show forth your compassions, and let your bowels yearn in behalf of so many thousands of poor souls, who are reduced to a morsel of bread for following the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. We recommend our pastors, with their scattered and dispersed flocks, to your fervent Christian prayers, and rest in haste.

Your brethren in the Lord.

*April 27, 1655."*

The foregoing letter, written by the Waldenses to their friends soon after their banishment from their homes amidst cruelties and slaughter too terrible even to be named, is but an example of the sufferings of those witnesses of Jesus. We now come to the final dispersion of the Waldenses





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



not been driven from her place of retreat. Here, in the mountain valleys, the altar-fires of the true temple of God burned undimmed; here the ordinances of the Lord's house were faithfully administered for 1260 years; here the sound of the Gospel, faithfully preached, was heard from the lips of the faithful under-shepherds, all this time; and from here, as from a parent hive, faithful missionaries went forth on the perilous work of preaching the Gospel and forming churches throughout the known world. The Waldensean heresy, as it was called, infected all the countries of earth through the influence of missionaries from these valleys. These ancient Waldenses in the Alps formed a kind of Gospel store-house, where the true Gospel, true ministers, and true ordinances, could be furnished to all the world. But, at last, the prophetic, fatal period came. The Waldenses must be slain, or expelled from their ancient loved valleys. This final dispersion of these witnesses for Christ took place, according to Mr. Jones, in the year 1686. He says: "I professed to give the history of the *churches* of Piedmont and other places, commonly designated Waldenses and Albigenses, not of individuals; and as I consider those churches to have been utterly dispersed and scattered by a series of persecutions, which terminated in the year 1686, I consider myself to have brought the subject to its legitimate close."

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
*preface, p. 9.*

After some years of comparative quiet of the Waldenses, says Mr. Jones: "On the 31st of January, 1686, they were amazed at the publication of an order from the Duke of Savoy, forbidding his subjects the exercise of the Protestant religion upon pain of death, and the confiscation of their goods; the demolition and the banishment of their



pastors. All infants born from that time, were to be baptized and brought up in the Roman Catholic religion, under the penalty of their fathers being condemned to the galleys. Their consternation was extreme.” The name of the cruel wretch who has the unenviable reputation of being the instrument of the slaughter, and final dispersion of these martyrs of Jesus, is *Victor Amadeus II.*, the Duke of Savoy. He, being instigated by the Catholic clergy, and goaded on by King Louis XIV. of France, desolated the peaceful valleys of the Waldenses with fire and sword in such a savage manner as should make humanity weep tears of blood, and move to pity the hearts of demons themselves. After the Waldenses had been brutally murdered in the valleys, driven over barren mountain snows into exile, or crowded into filthy prisons, we have the following mournful account of the miseries of the survivors of the first slaughter:

“The armies of France and Savoy, having inhumanly butchered a multitude of the Waldenses, committed more than twelve thousand of them to prison, and dispersed two thousand of their children among the Catholics; concluding that their work was accomplished, they caused all their property to be confiscated. And thus were the valleys of Piedmont depopulated of their ancient inhabitants, and the light of the glorious Gospel extinguished in a country where, for many preceding centuries, it had shone with resplendent luster.

*Jones' Ch. His.,*  
pp. 412, 413.

In the month of September, 1686, the Swiss cantons convened a general assembly at Aran, to deliberate on the condition of those who were either imprisoned or in a state of exile in Piedmont; and they came to the resolu-



tion of sending deputies to demand from the Duke the release of all that were confined, and the privilege of quitting the country. The latter, probably by this time glutted with human carnage, signed a treaty, in consequence of which the prisons were set open, and leave given to such as had survived, to depart peaceably, through that part of Savoy which borders upon Berne and the territory of Geneva. But a bare recital of the miseries which the prisoners had suffered during their confinement, is sufficient to sicken the heart. More than ten thousand persons were distributed among fourteen prisons or castles in Piedmont. They were fed for months upon bread and water—the former, in which were often found lime, glass, and filth of various kinds, was so bad as scarcely to deserve the name; while the latter, in many instances brought from stagnant pools, was scarcely fit for the use of cattle. Their lodging was upon bricks or filthy straw. The prisons were so thronged that, during the heat of the summer months, they became intolerable, and deaths were daily taking place. Want of cleanliness necessarily engendered diseases among them; they became annoyed with vermin, which prevented their sleep either by night or day. Many women in child-bearing were lost for the want of the care and comforts necessary to such a situation, and their infants shared the same fate.

Such was the state of these afflicted and persecuted creatures, when the Duke of Savoy's proclamation was issued for releasing them. It was now the month of October; the ground was covered with snow and ice; the victims of cruelty were almost universally emaciated through poverty and disease, and very unfit for the projected journey. The proclamation was made at the castle of Mondovi, for ex-





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



had not power to speak ; many staggered from faintness and disease ; while others, having lost the use of their limbs, were unable to lift up their hands to receive the assistance that was tendered them.

At Geneva they experienced that kind and hospitable reception which was due to them as their fellow-creatures, and more especially as their persecuted Christian brethren. They clothed the naked, fed the hungry, succored the afflicted, and healed the sick. But what pen can describe the affecting scene which now took place, while they halted at Geneva for rest and refreshment, before they proceeded forward into Switzerland ! Those who arrived first, naturally went out to meet those that came after, anxiously inquiring for their relations and friends, of whom they had heard nothing since the fatal catastrophe in the valleys of Piedmont. The father inquired after his child, and the child after its parent ; the husband sought his wife, and the latter her partner in life. Every one endeavored to gain some intelligence of his friend or neighbor ; but as three-fourths of them had died in prison or on the road, it exhibited a melancholy spectacle to see so many dissolved in tears at the distressing accounts they received. Their principal earthly comfort now arose from the hospitable kindness of the people of Geneva, who flocked around them and evinced such solicitude to conduct them to their own homes, that the magistrates of the city were obliged, in order to prevent confusion and disorder, to issue an injunction prohibiting any from going out of the city. There was a noble emulation who should entertain the most sick, or those that were most afflicted. They received them not merely as strangers in distress, but as Christian brethren, who brought peace and spiritual blessings into their fami-



lies. All that needed clothing were either supplied by those that lodged them, or by the Italian Bank, the directors of which, from first to last, evinced all the marks of tender compassion and of disinterested kindness.

But it was not only at Geneva that the Waldenses met with this kind and hospitable treatment. The cantons of Switzerland opened to them their country, and not their country only, but their hearts and affections also. The conduct of the Swiss, indeed, was so noble and disinterested throughout the whole of this distressing period, that it would be unjust to their memory to pass it over with a slight mention."

It was in the memorable year 1686, that *the valleys of Piedmont were "depopulated of their ancient inhabitants, and the light of the glorious Gospel extinguished in a country where, for many preceding centuries, it had shone with resplendent luster."*

The people who have inhabited the valleys since the great slaughter of 1686, are not the same class of people with the ancient witnessing Waldenses. The poet Milton, who was secretary to Oliver Cromwell, composed the following sonnet:

#### ON THE LATE MASSACRE IN PIEDMONT.

Avenge, O Lord, thy slaughtered saints, whose bones  
Lie scattered on the Alpine mountains cold;  
Even them who kept thy truth so pure of old,  
When all our fathers worshiped stocks and stones,  
Forget not. In thy book record their groans  
Who were thy sheep, and in their ancient fold  
Slain by the bloody Piedmontese, that rolled  
Mother with infant down the rocks. Their moans  
The vales redoubled to the hills, and they  
To heaven. Their martyred blood and ashes sow

*Jones' Ch.  
History,  
p. 374.*



O'er all th' Italian fields where still doth sway  
The tripled tyrant, that from these may grow  
A hundred fold, who, having learned thy way,  
Early may fly the Babylonian woe.

King Louis XIV. was mainly guilty of the final dreadful slaughter and dispersion of the Waldenses. It was the French Catholics that perpetrated such monstrous barbarities upon the helpless women and children of the Waldenses. And the French Emperor has indorsed all these cruelties of his ancestors by supporting the Pope on his throne by his army at Rome. France, as a Catholic country, has indorsed all the outrages perpetrated against these afflicted servants of God. And as God has declared that he will avenge his elect that cry unto him day and night, all those countries which have taken part in the persecution of the "martyrs of Jesus," may expect, in the day of vengeance, to drink blood; for they "are worthy." It would seem that the dreadful cup of vengeance is now being pressed to the lips of France. As we are now penning these lines, September, 1870, the news comes over the wires that the French armies are defeated in battle with dreadful slaughter, and that the Emperor Napoleon III. is a prisoner in the hands of the victorious King of Prussia. The cries of the souls of the martyrs under the altar will not always go unheeded.

We have found that the ancient Waldenses possessed, in an eminent degree, the Baptist peculiarities. And, therefore, the dreadful slaughter of these servants of God was really the murder of the ancient *Baptists*, who were called Waldenses. They were called "Anabaptists" all the time during this long period; and they were called *Baptists* and *Waldenses*, interchangeably, toward the close of this





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



with true churches, and many real saints connected with false churches. But it is evident that, for the glory of God and the advancement of his cause, all false Christians should be separated from the true churches, and all God's dear children should forsake false churches, and become identified with the kingdom of Jesus Christ.

*First:* THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH.—This is evidently a false church, because it is wholly destitute of the peculiar characteristics of the Church of Christ. I find that I shall only have space to name a few leading facts in regard to these false churches. It is but just to admit that the Romish Church is the most powerful religious organization that has ever opposed the cause of God in the world; and it is the oldest and most powerful false church on earth. Its underlying principles of legalism had commenced their work of moral death and ruin in the time of the apostles. These principles were developed into *baptismal salvation, infant baptism*, and the hierarchy, in the early part of the third century. And after the rejection or *casting out* of the corrupt elements by the true churches, the union of the corrupt church with the state took place under the Emperor Constantine the Great, in the year A. D. 312. We may safely locate the origin of the Catholic Church with the union with the state at this time. The first General Council was that of Nice, in the year 325. The blasphemous title of “Universal Bishop” was conferred on Boniface III., Bishop of Rome, by the Emperor Phocas, in the year A. D. 606. Thus the Bishop of Rome is made the head of the Catholic Church throughout the world.

*Dowling's His. of Rom., p. 55.*

But it was not until the year 756 that the Pope became



a temporal sovereign. King Pepin, of France, subdued the Lombards, and delivered the places wrested from Aistulphus, their king, to Pope Stephen. From this time forward, the popes have claimed both the spiritual and the temporal sword. The universal spiritual dominion came from the Emperor Phocas, who was a usurper and murderer, and the temporal kingdom was bestowed on the Pope by the usurper of the French throne, King Pepin. From the year 756, the usurpations of the popes were outrageous in the extreme. The Pope finally set up and pulled down kings at his pleasure. As early as the year 710, the Emperor Justinian showed his great respect for Pope Constantine by kissing his feet, and beseeching his "Holiness" to intercede for the pardon of his sins. It was in the year 1075 that Pope Gregory VII. excommunicated the Emperor Henry IV., in the following haughty language: " 'In the name of Almighty God, and by your authority,' said Gregory, alluding to the members of the council, 'I prohibit Henry, the son of our Emperor Henry, from governing the Teutonic Kingdom and Italy; *I release all Christians from their oath of allegiance to him; and I strictly forbid all persons from serving or attending him as king.*' " And Henry finally submitted himself to the haughty Gregory by "continuing for three days, in the cold month of January, barefoot and fasting; the humbled emperor was admitted into the palace, and allowed the *superlative honor of kissing the Pope's toe.*" The popes have not only claimed authority in the kingdoms of this world, by exalting themselves above kings and emperors, but they have even attempted to usurp the very seat and

*Dowling's His. of Rom., p. 165.*

*Dowling's His. of Rom., p. 243.*



throne of God himself. Instead of holding that Jesus is the Head of the church, the popes have “Inculcated and acted upon the pernicious and extravagant maxim, ‘THAT THE BISHOP OF ROME IS THE SUPREME LORD OF THE UNIVERSE, AND THAT NEITHER PRINCES NOR BISHOPS, CIVIL GOVERNORS NOR ECCLESIASTICAL RULERS, HAVE ANY LAWFUL POWER IN CHURCH OR STATE BUT WHAT THEY DERIVE FROM HIM.’” And the General Council at Rome has recently indorsed this awful blasphemy of the Pope by declaring his INFALLIBILITY. Instead of holding the Word of God as the rule of action, Rome holds *tradition* and the authority of the Pope as her rule of action. Prof. W. J. Walters, in his History of the Roman Catholic Church, says: “The Catholic Church maintains that there are doctrines of essential importance not contained in the Scriptures; as, for instance, the lawfulness and obligation of keeping holy the Sunday instead of the Saturday, the real Scriptural Sabbath; the validity of infant baptism,” etc. This learned Catholic historian admits that the Romish Church holds traditions, *such as infant baptism*, which are not in the Bible. Catholics, in this respect, are more candid than Protestants; for, while Protestants pervert the Scriptures to try to sustain the infant rite, the Catholics admit that it is only a Romish tradition. And in their controversies with Protestants, the Catholics press on them the fact that they have only copied infant baptism as a tradition from Rome. In the celebrated discussion between Mr. Pope, an Episcopalian, and Mr. Maguire, a Catholic priest, Mr. Maguire says: “I called on my opponent to produce proofs from Scripture, authorizing

*Dowling's His. of Rom.*, p. 293.

*Religious Denom., U.S.G.B.*, p. 142.

*Debate*, p. 164.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



seized the reins of authority over the poor spiritual slaves of the church. And as to their Supper, they have made a God of it, and they worship that God made by the hands of the priests. They suppose that the bread is literally the flesh, blood, and bones of Jesus. They worship the bread and eat it as a means of salvation. Rome has instituted her seven *sacraments*, all of which are unauthorized in the Bible. And, in the last place, as to the mark of being persecuted, Rome has been the great persecuting power. She has been drunk with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus for hundreds of years. She has never been persecuted for righteousness' sake. Some of her own sons have rebelled against her and slain some of her adherents; but this is only the foretaste of the vengeance that will be poured out on her in the day of her destruction.

It is a settled principle with the Church of Rome to persecute, and to extend her doctrines by fire and sword. At the present time, it will be impossible to give an accurate estimate of the numbers murdered by the Catholic emissaries. Mr. Dowling says: "From the birth of popery, in 606, to the present time, it is estimated, by careful and credible historians, that more than FIFTY MILLIONS of the human family have been slaughtered for the crime of heresy by popish persecutors—an average of more than *forty thousand religious murders* for every year of the existence of popery." And Mr. Dowling quotes Scott's

*Dowling's His. of Rom.*, p. 541.

*Dowling's His. of Rom.*, p. 542.

Church History, as follows: "No computation can reach the numbers who have been put to death, in different ways, on account of their maintaining the profession of the Gospel, and opposing the corruptions of the Church of Rome. A



MILLION of poor Waldenses perished in France; NINE HUNDRED THOUSAND orthodox Christians were slain in less than thirty years after the institution of the order of Jesuits. The Duke of Alva boasted of having put to death, in the Netherlands, THIRTY-SIX THOUSAND, by the hand of the common executioner, during the space of a few years. The Inquisition destroyed; by various tortures, ONE HUNDRED AND FIFTY THOUSAND within thirty years. These are a few specimens, and but a few, of those which history has recorded; but the total amount will never be known till the earth shall disclose her blood, and no more cover her slain."

The half has not been told. Rome has taxed her ingenuity in the invention of instruments of torture, to cause, if possible, the martyrs to blaspheme. The gloomy prisons of the *Inquisition* were frightful beyond conception. And besides all the murders committed by the instigation of Rome, the admitted profligacy of the popes, bishops, and priests, is too disgraceful to mention. Even many of the ancient nunneries were sinks of pollution. And after all the known enormities of papal Rome, we are told that she is the Church of God visible. There can be no reasonable doubt that the *Roman Catholic Church* is a false church. Her rise was gradual, and her decline has been the same way; but at last she will be destroyed with violence, as when a mighty mill-stone is cast into the sea.

*Second: The Lutheran Church.* This Protestant church owes its existence to *Doctor Martin Luther*, who was reared in the bosom of Rome, and became a superstitious monk. Luther was a man of energy and learning. He boldly assailed some of the most absurd features of the



Romish despotism, about the year 1520; and in 1524 he threw off the “monastic dress,” and married a nun. It is usually stated that the Lutheran Church began in 1525. It was in the year 1529 that the Reformers entered their *protest* against the action of the German Diet of Spires. “Hence arose the name of *Protestant*,” by which the Reformers have since been known. Martin Luther may very properly be styled the founder and head of this church. As an organization, it did not have Jesus as its founder and head. And instead of taking the Bible as their rule of conduct, the Lutherans are governed by the “Augsburg Confession,” with the various additions in the way of articles, catechisms, etc. They have failed to observe the *order* of the commandments; for they put what they term baptism before faith, in the case of infants, and do not bury in baptism at all. Luther retained many of the superstitions of the Church of Rome. He taught

‘That the body and blood of Christ are actually present, under the form or emblems of bread and wine, as dispensed to the communicants.’—Art. 10, Augsburg Confession.

*Religious Denom.,*  
*U. S. G. B., 334.*

This was called *con-substantiation*. And, notwithstanding Luther preached “justification by faith alone,” yet he nullified this doctrine by teaching baptism for salvation. We have the following statements of Luther, on the efficacy of baptism, as given by Elder T. W. Haynes, editor of the Carolina Baptist:

“Luther, in his preface to the Epistle to the Galatians, page 24, hurls his thunderbolts alike against Christ and Antichrist, the Baptists and Papists: ‘For at this day the Papists and Anabaptists conspire together against the church in this one point (though they dissem-

*Carolina Baptist,*  
*vol. I, 1845, p. 29.*





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



tion shows that Luther, the father of the Lutheran church, not only inherited the Romish dogma of baptismal salvation, but he also inherited the Romish spirit of persecution. He affirmed that *baptism is necessary to the salvation of infants*; and Luther, with the rest of the Augsburgers, condemned the unfortunate Baptists because they affirmed that *“children can be saved without baptism.”* And Luther’s condemnation of the Baptists for the terrible crime of denying infant baptism, was so strong that he calls them *“devils themselves, possessed with worse devils.”* Thus we find that the Lutheran Church retained the leading feature of Antichrist. And instead of holding religious equality in the government of the church, they are governed by a kind of spiritual aristocracy. And though they made war with their old Mother Rome, yet they combined with her to persecute the hated Baptists. They are not the church that has borne persecution through the dark ages for the sake of Jesus Christ. The Lutheran Church is the *first-born*, in modern times, of the old mother of “abominations.” Her founder, Luther, had his baby baptism, and ordination in Rome. The Catholics pressed the Protestants sorely with this difficulty. In their embarrassment they admitted that the Church of Rome was the *true church of Christ visible*, at least till after the coming out of the Protestant churches. But if she was the Church of Christ, or temple of God, through all the dark ages, while riding the scarlet beast and drunk with the blood of the martyrs, certainly she must be the true church till now. She has become no worse after the Reformation than before. On this point Luther says, as reported by Mr. Haynes, that: “Wherefore, wheresoever the substance of the word and sacraments remaineth, there is the holy church, although



Antichrist there reign, who (as the Scripture witnesseth) sitteth not in a stable of fiends, or in a swine sty, or in a company of infidels, but in the highest and holiest place of all—namely, ‘in the temple of God,’ 2 Thess. 2: 4. ‘Wherefore, although spiritual tyrants reign, yet there must be a temple of God, and the same must be preserved under them. Therefore, I answer briefly to this question, that the church is universal throughout the whole world, and wheresoever the Gospel of God and the sacraments are.’” This was Luther’s answer to the question: “Where was Protestant religion antecedent to Luther?”

Thus the renowned Luther is driven to the painful necessity of taking the position that the Romish Church was the temple of God under the *reign* of “spiritual tyrants.” This comment of Luther is found in his Commentary on Galatians 1: 2: “Unto the churches of Galatia.” But if Rome was the church universal and the “temple of God,” then Luther and all the “Protestants” were cast out of the *temple of God* when they were excluded from the Catholics; but, on the other hand, if Rome is the “great whore” of Babylon, as the Protestants affirm, then the Protestant churches are false churches, having emanated from Antichrist. “Who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean?” Let the Protestants take either horn of the dilemma, and they are pushed to the wall. As a daughter of the old bloody “*mother*,” the Lutheran Church began her career by taking the carnal sword to convert men to the religion of Jesus by killing them! She also took part with her bloody mother in shedding the blood of Baptists. And this same Lutheran Church has entered into marriage with the state in every land where she has had the opportunity. The Lutheran



Church can no more be the Church of Christ visible than old Rome can be that church.

*Third: The Episcopal Church* originated as early as the year 1530, when Henry VIII., King of England, rebelled against the Pope. Henry's rupture with the Pope grew out of the Pope's refusal to divorce the king from his wife, Catharine, to marry Anne Boleyn. The king divorced himself, and married the maid of honor to his former wife; and in the year 1530, he forced the Catholic clergy to proclaim himself as the "*supreme head of the Church of England*." But it was not till 1534 that the British parliament confirmed the adulterous king in his *headship* of the church. Of the Church of England, Mr. Orchard says: "The daughter of Rome was born in England, 1530, when Wareham, Archbishop of Canterbury, and the clergy of his diocese, in synod, declared Henry VIII. the putative parent of the English harlot, and the same was legally affiliated to him in 1534." And down to the present time, the kings and queens of England are regarded as the *head of the church*. This church has none of the marks of a true church. It, like its founder, was polluted with adultery and murder; for it was a state church from the beginning, and has engaged in the persecution of the Baptists by imprisonments and burning. This church, like the Lutheran, was only a part of the Romish Antichrist broken off, and she retained all the leading features of Antichrist. She inherited from her mother the doctrine of *baptismal salvation*. In the Episcopal Prayer Book, we have the following as a part of the service connected with the baptism of infants: "*Then shall the minister speak unto the god-fathers and*

*Book of Common Prayer*, pp. 180, 181.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



buried, that the new man may be raised up in him. Amen.

Grant that all sinful affections may die in *him*, and that all things belonging to the Spirit may live and grow in him. Amen," etc. And after the baptism of the child, the

*Book Com. Prayer,* p. 182. minister is requested to say: "We yield thee hearty thanks, most merciful Father, that it hath pleased thee to regenerate *this*

*infant* with the Holy Spirit, to receive *him* for thine own child, by adoption, and to incorporate *him* into thy holy church," etc. The reader is referred to the entire baptismal service, where he will see that the English Church has fully copied the Romish doctrine of *baptismal salvation*. They pray for the *release of the infant from sin*; that the old Adam may die in *him*, and that he may be delivered from the power of the Devil in baptism; and after baptism they thank God that the infant is "regenerated" and a child of God.

The same God-dishonoring doctrine of baptismal salvation is also taught in the catechism for children. Here it

*Catechism,* p. 7. is: "Q.—Who gave you this name? A.—

My sponsors in baptism: wherein I was made a member of Christ, the child of God, and an inheritor of the kingdom of heaven." Again: "Q.—How is the child made a member of Christ. A.—It is made a member of his church. Q.—How is it made a *child of God*? A.—It is taken into God's family. Q.—What was it before this. A.—Born in sin, a child of wrath." And once more: "Q.—What is it you thank God, your heavenly Father, for, when you thank him that he has called you to *this state* of salvation? A.—I thank him that in baptism he has made me a member of Christ, the child of God, and an



inheritor of heaven.” Such are the fatal delusions imposed on the poor children that are led by these blind guides. It is altogether out of the question to suppose that this church is a church of Jesus Christ. Some, who ought to know better, regard the Episcopal Church as “evangelical”!

*Fourth: The Presbyterian Church* was established in the year 1541 by John Calvin, a learned French Catholic, who repudiated the supremacy of the Pope, and established himself at Geneva, in Switzerland, as the head of the Presbyterian Church. This church, like the others, has a human founder and head; it is governed by the Westminster Confession of Faith; it does not observe the Bible order of the commands, for it puts “baptism” before repentance and faith; it does not bury in baptism; it has a hierarchy for a church government, in which one member is placed in authority above another; it does not confine its communion to the regenerate, and it has bitterly persecuted the Baptists for the sake of conscience. This church holds baptismal salvation in more modified terms than the older churches of the Reformation. In the Confession of Faith, Larger Catechism, *Question 165*:

“*What is baptism?* A.—Baptism is a sacrament of the New Testament, wherein

*Confess. of Faith,*  
p. 294.

Christ hath ordained the washing with water, in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, to be a sign and seal of ingrafting into himself, of remission of sins by his blood, and regeneration by the Spirit; of adoption and resurrection unto everlasting life; and whereby the parties baptized are solemnly admitted into the visible church, and enter into an open and professed engagement to be wholly and only the Lord’s.” Again,



in answer to question 177, we have the following: “The sacraments of baptism and the Lord’s Supper differ, in that, baptism is to be administered but once, with water, to be a sign and seal of our regeneration and ingrafting into Christ, and that even to infants; whereas the Lord’s Supper is to be administered often,” etc. Thus, according to Presbyterianism, baptism is a “*seal*” of *ingrafting into Christ, of remission of sins, regeneration, adoption, the resurrection and eternal life, and this even to infants*. But if baptism is a seal of all these blessings, and of the covenant of grace, it is necessary to salvation.

We now conclude this chapter, remarking however, first, that various branches have gone out from these three leading Protestant churches, which originated in the sixteenth century. And, beside all the other disqualifications, these churches want about *fifteen hundred years* of being old enough to claim to be the church that Jesus Christ established; they all came out of the Church of Rome; their ordinances came from Antichrist; they have all persecuted the Baptists for the sake of conscience, and they are all state churches, in every land where it is possible for them to establish themselves. And, while many good men belong to these churches, we must conclude that they are not the churches of the Lord Jesus Christ.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



Baptists hold immersion as the only Scriptural action of baptism.

The Catholics fell into the practice of trine immersion, or, rather, three immersions, for baptism; but Baptists, by whatever name called, have ever held the apostolic practice of “one baptism.” Catholics also practiced nude baptism in their early history. Some modern Pedobaptists have been so silly as to reproach Baptists on account of the “naked” baptisms of the Catholics; but they only exposed the *nakedness* of their own “mother” church. The Catholics practice the “baptism” of abortives. In their pious zeal to save infants from hell, the Romish Church gives “baptism” to unborn infants, in cases where death is expected. This is the present custom in this country. But it is unnecessary to reproach all Pedobaptists with such abominations—though this is as Scriptural as any other baby baptism. Baptists neither baptize infants nor adults without the profession of repentance, faith, and regeneration, on the part of the candidate.

Luther anathematized the Baptists of his times because they taught that infants could be saved without baptism. Zuingle, the co-reformer with Luther and Calvin, had several public debates with the Baptists, at Zurich, in 1525, on infant baptism. The Zuinglians claimed the victory, and proceeded to put the Baptists in prison. The ruling magistrates of the city give the following hard report of these Baptists, as reported in the *Martyrology*:

“‘Ye doubtless know, and have heard from many persons, how that for a long time past certain  
*Martyrology*, p. 9. men, who appear to be learned, have vehemently arisen, and, without any support from the Holy Scriptures, have pretended, and preached among simple



and pious men (who are otherwise well instructed in the love of God and of their neighbor, and live in peace with one another,) and without the permission and consent of the church have proclaimed, that infant baptism is not of God, but has sprung from the Devil, and, therefore, ought not to be practiced. They have also invented a re-baptism; and many men, unlearned in the holy Scripture, taken with their vain talk and so far persuaded, have received this re-baptism, esteeming themselves better than other people. Whence have arisen and grown up discord, disobedience, contention, devourings, strifes against love, in places and among men who formerly lived in unanimity. Therefore have we imprisoned, and punished for their good, some of the authors of Anabaptism and their disciples, and have twice, at their desire, ordained conferences, or disputations, on infant and re-baptism.”

According to this representation, these Baptists regarded infant baptism as the invention of the “Devil”; and no wonder; for their ancestors had been slain by multitudes for rejecting the infant ceremony, and German Baptists were constantly imprisoned and punished for the same offense. And after all the victories gained over the despised Anabaptists in the public disputes, these enemies admit that “many men” “received this re-baptism”; and the Baptists were still ready for other public controversies. And if the Pedobaptists were so successful as they pretended, why was it necessary to imprison and punish the Baptists? These persecutions were from Protestants. These martyr Baptists were not in favor of baptismal salvation. This is seen in the charges against George Wagner, who was burned by the Catholics in 1527. We have the following account of the martyrdom of this Baptist:



“George Wagner, of Emmerick, was apprehended at Munich, in Bavaria, on account of four articles of faith. First, that the priests can (not) forgive men their sins.

*Martyrology*, pp. 16-18. Secondly, he does not believe that a man can bring God from heaven. Thirdly, he does

not believe that God, or Christ, is bodily in the bread that the priests place upon the altar; but that it is the bread of the Lord. Fourthly, he holds not the belief that the baptism of water saves men. For these articles, because he would not retract them, was he put to great torture, so that the prince had great compassion on him, visited him in person in prison, and earnestly exhorted him, saying that he would call him his friend during his life. In like manner, the steward of the prince's household persuaded him to recant, and made him many promises. Finally, his wife and child were brought into the prison and placed before him, to move him thereby to a recantation. He suffered not himself to be moved, but said, that though his wife and child were indeed so dear to him, that the prince with his whole land could not purchase them from him, yet, nevertheless, he would not forsake the Lord his God. Many priests, and others likewise, came to him, to persuade him; but he was firm and immovable in what God had given him to know. He was finally condemned to the flames and to death. When he was delivered over to the executioner, and led into the middle of the city, he said, ‘This day will I confess my God to the glory of Christ Jesus, that such happiness is afforded me in the sight of all the world.’ His face was not pale, nor were his eyes distorted. With a smile playing on his lips he went to the fire, where the executioner bound him to the ladder, and hung a bag of gunpowder





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



be fed till their days were ended with bread and water. That they, therefore, should remain in the dark tower together, both the living and the dead, surrounded with filth and putrefaction, until not a single survivor of the whole remained.' 'Likewise, that some of them had not taken a mouthful of bread for three days, in order that the rest might have the more to eat,' etc. 'O God!' he further writes, 'what a hard, severe, cruel sentence upon pious Christian people, of whom no one could speak evil, only that they had received water baptism in obedience to the command of Christ!' O, sad deformation, say we, of these so-called reformed! The Lord forgive them, and be merciful to their blindly zealous souls!"

Hubmeyer was for a while a Reformer with Zuingle, but he rejected infant baptism and joined the hated Baptists. Zuingle turned persecutor against him. In his controversy with Zuingle, Hubmeyer said: "Why, therefore, do we baptize children? Baptism, they *Martyrology*, p. 72. say, is a mere sign. A sign truly it is, and a symbol instituted by Christ in most pregnant and august words. But it can not be made to apply to babes; therefore is infant baptism without any authority whatever. 'I believe and know,' he concludes, 'that Christendom shall not receive its rising aright, unless baptism and the Lord's Supper are brought to their original purity.' "

This last quotation shows that these Baptists regarded baptism as a "symbol;" they did not adopt the idea of baptismal regeneration. Hubmeyer was put in prison by the Reformers at Zurich, and after many trials he escaped from the Protestants at Zurich and fell into the hands of the Catholics of Moravia, and was committed to the flames;



and his wife, who had shared with him the sufferings of prison, was drowned at Vienna in the river Danube.

*Michael Satler* and his wife were murdered by the Catholics. Satler was a Baptist preacher who descended from the Waldenses. The following is the cruel sentence against him: “ ‘Between the Stadtholder of his imperial majesty and Michael Satler, is *Martyrology*, p. 27. made known the following sentence: That Michael Satler be delivered over to the executioner, who shall bring him to the place of execution and cut out his tongue; he shall then throw him upon a cart, and twice tear his flesh with red-hot pincers; he shall then be brought to the city gate, and shall have his flesh five times torn in like manner.’ This was accordingly done; after which, as a heretic, he was burned to ashes. Of his companions, the brethren were executed by the sword, and the sisters were drowned. His wife, after much entreaty, exhortation, and threatening had been employed, remaining immovable, was some days after likewise drowned. This took place on the 25th of May, anno 1527.”

The Baptists of these troublous times certainly had the mark of being persecuted. The Catholic Emperor, Charles V., issued an edict in 1535, *against the Baptists*. After addressing all his officers, the emperor proceeds: “ ‘In order to provide against and remedy the errors and seductions which many sec- *Martyrology*, pp. 138–140. taries and authors of mischief, with their followers, have dared to sow and spread in our possessions, in opposition to our holy Christian faith, the sacraments and commands of the holy church our mother; we have at various times decreed, caused to be made and proclaimed, many mandates, containing statutes, edicts, and



ordinances, together with punishments that transgressors should suffer: in order that by such means the common and simple people, and others, might guard themselves against the aforesaid errors and abuses, and that their chief promoters and sectaries might be punished and corrected, as an example to all. And it having come to our knowledge that, notwithstanding our aforesaid mandates, many and various sectaries (even some who are denominated Anabaptists, or re-baptizers) have promoted, and are daily promoting, the spreading, sowing, and secret preaching of their said abuses and errors, in order to draw over to their false doctrine and reprobate sect a great number of men and women, in order to mislead the same, and some of them to re-baptize, to the great scandal and contempt of the sacrament of holy baptism, and of our edicts, statutes, and ordinances: therefore, being desirous to provide against and remedy the same, we summon and command, that, from this time, having seen these presents, you make proclamation, in all the parts and limits of your jurisdiction, that all who are, or shall be found to be, infected by the accursed sect of Anabaptists, or re-baptizers, of what state or condition soever they be, their abettors, followers, and accomplices, shall suffer the forfeiture of life and estate, and shall, without any delay, be brought to the severest punishment; that is to say, they who remain obstinate, and harden themselves in their wicked opinions and purposes, or who have seduced and re-baptized any person, or who have borne and had the name of prophets, apostles, or bishops, [shall be put to death] by fire. And all other sorts of people, who have been re-baptized, or who secretly and with previous counsel have harbored any of the said Anabaptists, or re-baptizers, and





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY  
BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



“OF A CERTAIN PROCLAMATION PUBLISHED AT ZURICH AGAINST THE BAPTISTS, A. D. 1525.—At this time *Martyrol.*, pp. 4, 5. not only the Papists, but likewise the Reformed, call Zuinglians, in the town of Zurich, laid hands on the simple, harmless sheep of Christ; yet not (that we can find) to punish them with death, or by an executioner to deprive them of life; but they put them in close confinement, until (as may be concluded) death at last followed.

But in order to determine what measures from that time forward should be employed, the following ordinance, accompanied by many more words, was issued by the magistrates of that city:

‘Therefore we ordain, and it is our will, that henceforward all men, women, young men, and maidens, abstain from re-baptism, and from this time practice it no more; and that they bring the young children to be baptized. For whoever shall act contrary to this public order, shall, as often as it occurs, be punished by a fine of a mark of silver; and if any shall be altogether disobedient and rebellious, they shall be dealt with severely; for we will protect the obedient, and punish the disobedient according to his deserts, without further forgiveness. Let each one act accordingly.

And all this we confirm by letters patent, sealed with our city seal, and given on St. Andrew’s Day, [Nov. 30,] anno 1525.’ ”

After this proclamation the Protestants proceeded to harsher measures. They published the following in 1530:

*Martyrology*, pp. 121, 122. “ ‘Therefore we strictly command all the inhabitants of our land, and those in anywise allied thereto, and especially the su-



perior and inferior officers, sergeants, city officers, magistrates, elders of churches, and ministers, wherever they shall discover any Anabaptists, that they make it known to us, according to the oath by which they are bound; that they nowhere suffer the same, nor let them multiply, but seize them, and deliver them over to us; for, according to the tenor of our laws, we will punish the Anabaptists with death, together with those who sanction or follow them. Whosoever shall assist them, or abstain from giving information concerning them, neither will pursue them, nor bring them prisoners, shall likewise be punished according to their deserts, and without any favor, as guilty of a breach of the fidelity and the oath which they have sworn to the ruling powers.' ”

Volumes might be filled with the details of the sufferings of the German and Dutch Baptists. They were persecuted alike by Catholics and Protestants. The decrees of the Zuinglians were as cruel as that of Charles V. It will be seen that all the leading Protestant Reformers embraced the leading characteristic of Rome by persecuting the Baptists. It is a well known historic fact, that John Calvin, the founder of Presbyterianism, procured the death of Servetus on account of his Baptist principles. Concerning this bloody deed, Mr. Robinson remarks that:

“ Calvin did not blush to say : ‘ I ordered it so that a party should be found to accuse him, not denying that the action was

*Rob.'s Eccl. Res.,*  
p. 339.

drawn up by my advice.’ What a glorious Reformation had been wrought in Geneva, when a proof of a man’s Christianity lay in his humbly requesting the magistrates to burn a foreign gentleman over whom they had no jurisdiction, for the honor of God and his eminent servant



John Calvin.” It is true that Servetus was accused of denying the doctrine of the Trinity; but if this were true, Calvin had no right to burn him to death. Even the mild Melancthon indorsed the burning of Servetus.

In regard to the persecutions under Luther, Mr. Curtis reports him as follows: “Luther says of false teachers:

*I'rog. Bapt. Prin.,* ‘I am very averse to the shedding of blood. ’Tis sufficient that they should  
p 31.

be banished;’ but he allows that they may be ‘corrected and forced at least to silence—put under restraint as madmen.’ As to the Jews, he thought ‘their synagogues should be leveled with the ground, their houses burned, and their books—even the Old Testament—taken from them.’ Several of the Anabaptists were also put to death by the Lutherans, ‘for propagating their errors, contrary to the judgment of the Landgrave of Hesse Cassel.’”

In the year 1659 the Baptists were banished by the Presbyterians from Switzerland as being an “extremely dangerous and wicked sect.” In the conclusion of this section, we proceed to give a few examples of the terrible sufferings of the Baptists in England. The leading Protestant authors do not conceal the bitterness of their opposition to the Baptists. Mr. Neal, the historian, complains of the Baptists as follows: “The people of this persuasion

*Crosby's His. Eng. Bapt., vol. I, pref.,* were more exposed to the public resentment, because they would hold com-  
p. 5.

munion with none but such as had been dipped. All,” says he, “must *pass under this cloud* before they could be received into their churches; and the same narrow spirit prevails too generally among them even at this day.” Mr. Crosby remarks that “Dr. Featly, writing against the Baptists of his day, says: ‘He could





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



This account, as given by Bishop Burnett, shows that both Cranmer and Ridley, who were themselves burned by the bloody Mary, were guilty of procuring the burning of Joan of Kent. Joan was burned to death by these Protestant reformers for the crime of being a Baptist. Cranmer and Ridley are often held up before the world as martyrs; but it is justice to observe, that while they were in power, they persecuted and killed others for conscience sake, and when the Catholics came into authority, under Mary, they, in turn, suffered death. Whatever may be said of bishops Cranmer and Ridley, they were not martyrs for Jesus Christ; they were the murderers of others, and when the scale turned, they themselves were murdered by the Catholics. Mr. Crosby remarks that:

*Crosby's His. Eng. Bapt., vol. I, p. 80.* “In the year 1550, about the end of December, the same author assures us, that after many cavils in the State, an act passed for the king's general pardon, wherein the Anabaptists are excepted. ‘Last of all,’ says the Bishop, (that is, of the acts made by this parliament) ‘came the king's general pardon, out of which those in the tower or other prisons, on the account of the State, as also all Anabaptists, were excepted.’” Thus we have exhibited the bitterness of that hate against the Baptists which caused them to be retained in filthy prisons when others were pardoned. And this was under the mild reign of King Edward as the head of the Episcopal Church.

We have the following account, as given by Mr. Pierce, of the effort of Mr. Fox to procure the mitigation of the punishment of Joan: “‘Now,’ says Mr. Fox, ‘when the Protestant bishops had resolved to put her to death, a friend of

*Crosby's His. Eng. Baptists, vol. I, pp. 59, 60.*



Mr. John Rogers, the divinity-reader in St. Paul's Church, came to him, earnestly desiring him to use his influence with the archbishop, that the poor woman's life might be spared, and other means used to prevent the spreading of her opinions, which might be done in time: urging, too, that while she lived, she infected few with her opinions, yet she might bring many to think well of it by suffering death for it. He pleaded, therefore, that it was better she should be kept in some prison, without an opportunity of propagating her notion among weak people, and so she would do no harm to others, and might live to repent herself. Rogers, on the other hand, pleaded she ought to be put to death. Well, then, says his friend, if you are resolved to put an end to her life, together with her opinion, choose some other kind of death more agreeable to the gentleness and mercy prescribed in the Gospel,—there being no need that such tormenting deaths should be taken up in imitation of the Papists. Rogers answered, that *burning alive* was no cruel death, but easy enough. His friend then hearing these words, which expressed so little regard to a poor creature's sufferings, answered him with great vehemence, and striking Rogers' hand, which before he held fast, said to him: *Well, perhaps, it may so happen that you yourselves shall have your hands full of this mild burning.* And so it came to pass; and Rogers was the first man who was burned in Queen Mary's time.' "

Thus we learn that the great "martyr," John Rogers, was a murderer of a Baptist. He was not one of the martyrs of Jesus; for they did not persecute others on account of their religious views. These Protestant ministers of the Church of England were unwilling that a Baptist wo-



man should have an easier death than burning. Such were the feelings of hatred against the members of that "sect" which was every-where spoken against.

During the reign of the bloody Mary, a Baptist, originally from Holland, by the name of David George, died in England. Speaking of him, Mr. Crosby says: "He died in the year 1556, and was honorably buried in St.

Lawrence Church. Some time after his death, it was discovered that he was an

*His. Eng. Bapt.,*  
*vol. I, p. 64.*

Anabaptist; upon which his house, and those of his followers, were searched, a certain number of divines and lawyers appointed to examine them, his opinions were condemned by an ordinance, his picture carried about and burnt, and his corpse taken up three years after buried and burnt, etc." It will be observed that the Church of England was Catholic or Protestant alternately, as it happened to have a Catholic or Protestant ruler on the throne; and this bloody church persecuted the Baptists, both living and dead, whether it bore the name of Catholic or Protestant. Even the "good Queen" Elizabeth found it necessary, in the year 1575, to persecute, with banishment, those Baptists who would not take a blasphemous oath in the renunciation of all and every *Anabaptistical* error." And even Mr. Fox, the Martyrologist, indorsed the sentence of banishment against the Baptists. In his letter to Queen Elizabeth, Mr. Fox says:

"Many others were condemned to exile—a right sentence, in my opinion. But I

*Crosby's His. Eng. Bapt.,*  
*p. 71.*

hear there is one or two of these who are appointed to the most severe of punishments—viz: *burning*—except your clemency prevent." But the letter of John Fox, pleading for the mitigation of their punish-





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



sumption of the title of "Doctor of Divinity" as "blasphemy." What will our modern D.D.'s think of this?

Enoch Clapham, writing against the English Baptists and others, in the year 1608, gives the following account of their doctrine, as reported by Crosby:

*Crosby's His. Eng. Bapt., pp. 88, 89.* tists, according to his account, held, that repentance and faith must precede baptism; that the baptism both of the church

of England and of the Puritans was invalid, and that the true baptism was among them. He says further, that they complained against the term *Anabaptist*, as a name of reproach unjustly cast upon them. He also takes notice, that some of this opinion were Dutchmen, who, beside the denial of infant baptism, held, that it was unlawful to bear arms: That Christ did not receive his human nature of the Virgin, but brought it down with him from heaven; and agreed with the Roman Catholics in the doctrines of reprobation, free will, and justification. That there were others who went under this denomination that were Englishmen, to whom he does not so directly charge the former opinions, only the denial of their first baptism, and separating both from the established church, and other Dissenters; and says, that they came out from the Brownists, and that there was a congregation of them in Holland. When the *Anabaptist* is asked what religion he is of, he is made to answer: *of the true religion, commonly termed Anabaptism, from our baptizing.*"

When the Arian says, "I am of the mind that there is no true baptism upon earth, the Anabaptist replies, *I pray thee, son, say not so; the congregation I am of can, and doth, administer true baptism.* When an inquirer after truth



offers, upon his proving what he has said, to leave his old religion, the Anabaptist answers: *you may say, if God will give the grace to leave it; for it is a peculiar grace to leave Sodom and Egypt, spiritually so-called.* When the same person offers to join with them, and firmly betake himself to their faith; the Anabaptist replies: *the dew of heaven come upon you; to-morrow I will bring you into our sacred congregation, that so you may come to be informed in the faith, but after that, to be purely baptized.*" It will be remembered, that this account of the English Baptists, was by their opponent, Enoch Clapham, and may be considered valuable as to the matters of fact stated. Several important points are brought to view in these quotations, as follows:

*First: The English Baptists held, that repentance and faith must precede baptism.*

*Second: That the baptism of the Church of England and of the Puritans was invalid:*

*Third: That the true baptism was among themselves:*

*Fourth: That the term Anabaptist was a name of reproach, unjustly cast upon them:*

*Fifth: And that they regarded the churches of Rome and England, with all their branches, as Sodom and Egypt, spiritually so called.*

In the year 1611, King James, the author of the common version of the Bible, showed his zeal for the Episcopal Church by burning alive two men for heresy. They were burnt in Smithfield, in the year 1611. One of these was Legate, who was accused of denying the doctrine of the Trinity; and "The other was one Edward Wightman, a Baptist of the town of Burton upon Trent, who, on the 14th

*Crosby's His. Eng  
Bap., vol. I, p. 108*



day of December, was convicted of divers heresies, before the bishop of Coventry and Litchfield; and being delivered up to the secular power, was burnt at Litchfield the 11th of April following."

We find among the errors for which Wightman was burned, he held: "That the baptizing of infants is an abominable custom: That the Lord's Supper and baptism are not to be celebrated as they are now practiced in the Church of England: That Christianity is not wholly professed and preached in the Church of England, but only in part." And besides burning Baptists, King James seized their estates and wasted "away their lives privately in nasty prisons." It is no wonder that he constructed rules to prevent a perfect translation of the Bible.

The hatred against the English Baptists was so intense, even under the Presbyterian rule, that Samuel Oates, a

Baptist preacher, was arrested in 1646, See *Crosby, vol. I*, "and put in irons as a murderer," because p. 236.

a lady died a few weeks after her baptism. But upon trial it was found that Anne Martin, the lady who died, was in better health for some time after her baptism than for years before. These sons of Calvin made a desperate effort to secure the execution of Oates, the Baptist preacher, as a murderer for the practice of immersion. The secret of the matter was, that Oates was an able preacher "and great disputant" against the false claims of Presbyterianism. During the reign of Charles II. a Baptist preacher, by the name of John James, was pulled down from the pulpit while preaching, by an officer of the government, and was afterward arrested and tried, under the pretense that he had spoken treason. And after he was condemned to death, his wife bore a petition to the





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



And covetous physicians, methinks, should not be much against them. Catarrhs and obstructions, which are the two great fountains of most mortal diseases in man's body, could scarce have a more notable means to produce them where they are not, or to increase them where they are. Apoplexies, lethargies, palsies, and all comatous diseases, would be promoted by it. So would cephalalgies, hemi-cranies, phthises, debility of the stomach, crudities, and almost all fevers, dysenteries, diarrheas, cholics, iliac passions, convulsions, spasms, tremors, etc. All hepatic, splenic, pulmonic persons, and hypochondriacs, would soon have enough of it.' "

Thus we have Richard Baxter's statement of the evils of immersion. According to him, it is almost as bad as Pandora's box, in producing human woes. Mr. Baxter concluded by saying that immersion "is good for nothing but to dispatch men out of the world that are burdensome, and to ranken church-yards." He even constructed an argument to try to prove that immersion is a "breach of the seventh commandment—*Thou shalt not commit adultery.*" But enough: this is but one example of the intense opposition to Baptists by those Protestants who had not the power to lay violent hands on them. It was my design to introduce many other illustrious examples of the sufferings of the English Baptists for the cause of truth; but space forbids. Like the ancient Waldenses, the Baptists of this period have suffered in almost every conceivable way, for their attachment for the cause of Christ. Women have gone to the stake from the advanced age of eighty-four years down to the tender age of fourteen, where they were burned to ashes simply because they maintained the doctrine of the Baptists. Baptist ministers have spent



from one to twenty years of their ministerial lives in filthy prisons, because of their attachment to Baptist doctrine. Truly, they belonged to that “sect” every-where spoken against. We have not pursued the regular order in the application of the peculiarities to this period. The great mass of the German and English Baptists maintained the Bible characteristics, even at the sacrifice of their lives. The exception to this was, the Open-communion Baptists of Poland, under the leadership of Socinus, and the English Open-communion Baptists, led by Robert Hall. But it is generally admitted, by men of candor, that open communion is wholly inconsistent with Baptist principles.

---

## SECTION II.—DISTINCTION BETWEEN THE ANCIENT AND MODERN MENNONITES.

Menno Simon, a native Friesland, a Romish priest, renounced the Catholic Church and joined the Baptists in 1536. His wonderful success as a Baptist minister brought down the hatred and persecution of all Pedobaptists upon him. And from him the opponents of the Baptists began to call them Mennonites. Mosheim, the historian, in his account of the Baptists, heads the chapter, “THE HISTORY OF THE ANABAPTISTS OR MENNONITES.” The question has lately been raised as to the Baptist character of the Mennonites. The confusion on this point has arisen from a failure to discriminate between the original strict Mennonites, and the modern Mennonites. Menno himself was a strict Baptist. It is known that all Mennonites profess to practice believer’s baptism, but the recent Mennonites are known to practice pouring for baptism



J. N. Brown, the author of the Religious Encyclopedia, states, upon the authority of Mr. Ward, that, “The modern Mennonites plead the authority of Menno for the use of pouring and sprinkling as baptism. But in reality it is a wide departure from the views of Menno, who says, ‘After we have searched ever so diligently, we shall find no other baptism but dipping in water, which is acceptable to God and approved in his Word.’”

And Mr. Benedict remarks that: “Menno was, indeed, a distinguished teacher among the Anabaptists during the whole of his ministry, but Mosheim’s account of his gathering up the fragments of the society after their dispersion, and re-organizing them upon new and better principles, is not at all sustained by anything that appears in their own relations. They were the same people in policy and practice before Menno came among them, as afterward.”

These quotations go to prove, that Menno held the Baptist doctrine of immersion, and that he joined the Baptists, who were denominationally the same people before and after his reception among them.

Mosheim, the historian, settles the fact, that the original Mennonites were thorough immersionists. Speaking of the particular Baptists of England, he says: “The Baptists of the latter sect settled chiefly in London, and in the adjacent towns and villages; and they have departed so far from the tenets of their ancestors, that, at this day, they retain no more of the peculiar doctrines and institutions of the Mennonites, than the administration of baptism by immersion, and the refusal of that sacrament to infants, and those of tender years; and consequently they have

*Mosheim’s Church  
His., p. 500.*

*Benedict’s His.  
Bapt., p. 124.*

*Rel. Encyc., p. 797.*





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



also given a striking instance of defection in the case now before us, and have almost wholly relinquished this fundamental doctrine of their sect, relating to the nature of the Christian Church.”

In this extract we have exhibited the purity of the ancient Mennonite doctrine concerning the church, and also the fact that the modern Mennonites have departed from these original principles. A controversy originated among the Mennonites concerning church discipline. This began about the middle of the sixteenth century. One party favored the rigid execution of church discipline, while the other was more moderate. Speaking of these parties, Mos-

heim remarks: “These two sects are, to this very day, distinguished by the denomination of *fine* and *gross*, or, to express the distinctions in more intelligible terms, into *rigid* and *moderate* Anabaptists. The former observe, with the most religious accuracy, veneration, and precision, the ancient doctrine, discipline, and precepts, of the purer sort of Anabaptists; the latter depart much more from the primitive sentiments, manners, and institutions of their sect, and more nearly approach those of the Protestant churches. The gross or modern Anabaptists consisted, at first, of the inhabitants of a district in North Holland, called Water Land; and hence their whole sect received the denomination of Water Landrians.”

*Mosheim's Church  
His., p. 496.*

heim remarks: “These two sects are, to this very day, distinguished by the denomination of *fine* and *gross*, or, to express the distinctions in more intelligible terms, into *rigid* and *moderate* Anabaptists. The former observe, with the most religious accuracy, veneration, and precision, the ancient doctrine, discipline, and precepts, of the purer sort of Anabaptists; the latter depart much more from the primitive sentiments, manners, and institutions of their sect, and more nearly approach those of the Protestant churches. The gross or modern Anabaptists consisted, at first, of the inhabitants of a district in North Holland, called Water Land; and hence their whole sect received the denomination of Water Landrians.”

This needs no comment. It was the gross Mennonites—for the historian uses the words Anabaptists and Mennonites interchangeably—that departed from their original principles of purity in doctrine and practice. The present Mennonites, who pour for baptism, are the descendants of the Water Landrians, and not of the original Mennonites.



And when it is now stated that the Mennonites practice pouring for baptism, or that they are not Baptists, we must understand the allusion to be made to the descendants of the gross Mennonites.

The departure of modern Mennonites from the principles held by their ancestors, is confirmed by other historians. Isaac Backus, speaking of the Mennonites of this country, remarks that: "The Mennonites also came from Germany, and are of like behavior, but they are not truly Baptists now. Their fathers were so in Luther's day, until confinement in prison brought them to pour water on the heads of the subjects, instead of immersion; and what was then done out of necessity is now done of choice, as other corruptions are."

*Backus' Ch. His.,*  
p. 227.

Mr. Benedict acknowledges that part of the Mennonites have departed from their original custom of immersion. It is evident that some of our writers have conceded too much when they intimate that the original Mennonites were not immersionists. The original Mennonites, who were called Anabaptists, passed in shoals into England, where they are known under the name of Baptists. And those who now retain the name Mennonites, have entirely departed from the original doctrine of Menno and the "Anabaptists."

It may be proper to mention the rise of some of the more modern societies which have recently come into existence. We have already given an outline of the rise of the Lutherans, Episcopalians, and Presbyterians. From these Protestant churches numerous branches put forth. All the branches of Protestantism have their denominational succession from the Church of Rome. The Methodist society came out of the Church of England. The rise



of this society was peculiar. It was for some time only a society in the Episcopal Church. The work of the Wesleys began as early as 1729; but it was in 1737 that they claimed that "God then thrust them out to raise up a holy people." But it was not till the year 1784 that the Methodist Episcopal Church was formed as an independent body. And it was as late as the year 1845 that the M. E. Church South was established as a separate organization.

This society is wholly destitute of those peculiar features which characterize the Church of Jesus Christ. It has John Wesley as its founder and head. Nathan Bangs, in his *History of Methodism*, says of Mr. Wesley: "He was

*His. of Methodism,*  
*vol. I, p. 6.* the father of Methodism in this country, and, as such, deserves a conspicuous place

in that temple which his own hands contributed so effectually to erect, that his sons in the Gospel and successors in the ministry may look to him as an example for their imitation, and be stimulated and strengthened in their work." And instead of the Scriptures, the Methodist society is governed by the Book of Discipline, which is not even founded on the Bible; for the bishops of the South say: "We esteem it our duty and privilege

*Discipline, p. 3.* most earnestly to recommend to *you*, as members of our church, our FORM OF DISCIPLINE, which has been founded on the experience of a long series of years; as also on the observations and remarks we have made on ancient and modern churches."

Neither do the Methodists observe the Bible order of the commandments; for they place what they term baptism before repentance or faith. Neither do they observe the religious equality taught in the Scriptures; for their form of church government is a hierarchy which gives some





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



is no other means of entering into the church, or into heaven. In all ages, the outward baptism is a means of the inward; as outward circumcision was of the circumcision of the heart.” In regard to infant baptism, Mr. Wesley remarks: “As to the grounds of it: if infants are guilty of original sin, then they are proper subjects of baptism; seeing, in the ordinary way, they can not be saved, unless this be washed away by baptism. It has been already proved, that this original stain cleaves to every child of man; and that hereby they are children of wrath, and liable to eternal damnation. It is true the second Adam has found a remedy for the disease, which came upon all by the offense of the first. But the benefit of this is to be received through the means which he hath appointed; through baptism in particular, which is the ordinary means which he hath appointed for that purpose; and to which God hath tied us, though he may not have tied himself. Indeed, where it can not be had, the case is different; but extraordinary cases do not make void a standing rule. This, therefore, is our first ground: Infants need to be washed from original sin; therefore, they are proper subjects of baptism.” Once more Mr. Wesley says: “Lastly, if there are such inestimable benefits conferred in baptism, the washing away the guilt of original sin, the engrafting us into Christ by making us members of his church, and thereby giving us a right to all the blessings of the Gospel; it follows, that infants may, yea, ought to be, baptized, and that none ought to hinder them.”

These quotations from Mr. Wesley; the founder of the Methodist society, exhibit the fact, that he embraced the



Romish abomination of baptismal salvation, and even applied it to infants. This doctrine is incorporated in Methodism; and this error of itself would be sufficient to invalidate the claims of the Methodist society to be a true church of Christ. Yet it is evident that there are many of the people of God among the Methodists; who have mistaken their duty concerning the Church of Christ. But beside all the other disqualifications, the Methodist society is about 1700 years too young, to be the church set up by Jesus Christ.

*The Campbellite Church.* This society was established under the leadership of Alexander Campbell in the year 1827. It has Mr. Campbell for its founder and head. In the biographical sketch of the life of Mr. Campbell by Mr. Segar, published with Mr. Campbell's Familiar Lectures on the Pentateuch, we have the following historic statement:

“Alexander Campbell soon became chiefly and prominently known as the recognized head of a new religious movement, the purpose of which was to restore Primitive Christianity in all its simplicity and beauty. Out of this movement has grown a people who choose to call themselves Christians or Disciples, now numbering not less than five hundred thousand members in the United States.”

Thus we have the acknowledgment of the leading Campbellites, that Alexander Campbell is the “recognized head” of this *new* religious movement, out of which has grown the “Christian Church.” For further proof that Mr. Campbell was the founder of this society, the reader is referred to chapter fourth of my Text-Book on Campbellism. It is evident that this society, which has Mr. Campbell for its founder and head, is not the true Church of Christ; for



the true church has Jesus Christ for its founder and head. The Reformation of the nineteenth century had its foundation in skepticism concerning the perpetuity of the kingdom of Christ. It became necessary for Mr. Campbell to make the impression, that the church had apostatized in order that he might have a good excuse to introduce his religious movement to *restore* Primitive Christianity. In regard to the extent of the apostacy, Mr. Campbell says that, "A few green spots here and there in the wastes of

*Mill. Harbinger,*  
*Vol. V, p. 372.*

Zion, a few individuals exhibiting the fruits of the ancient faith, need not be adduced in proof that the whole body is not

full of wounds and bruises and putrifying sores. The leprosy of the apostacy has spread over all Christendom, Catholic and Protestant." If this statement of the Reformer is correct, then the Savior was mistaken, for the gates of hell have prevailed against his church. Let God be true, if it makes every man a liar. The members of this society are much divided as to the most appropriate name to call themselves as a church. In some sections they call themselves "Disciples," but in others they call themselves the "Christian Church," and of late, some of them are contending for the name "Church of God." We are informed that a committee has recently been appointed in the State of Kentucky, to try, if possible, to settle the controversy about their name. It would seem that they depend much on the name to establish their claims to be the Church of Christ! These modern Disciples profess to take the Bible as their rule of conduct, but when brought to the test, they set aside almost half of the New Testament, as not being applicable to the present dispensation. They think it wrong to use the model prayer, called "the





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



was the converting act; immersion *alone* was that act of turning to God.”

A volume might be filled with quotations to the same effect, from the leading Reformers. For the full discussion of the claims of this new sect, which is now about 43 years old, the reader is referred to the Text-Book on Campbellism. This society is about 1800 years too young to be the church set up by Jesus Christ; and it is also wholly destitute of the peculiar characteristics of the kingdom of heaven. There are many other societies of recent origin, claiming to be branches of the Church of Christ, which we have not space to examine. And several new societies are now in process of organization, which will soon be contending for the privileges and authority of veritable churches of Jesus Christ. The world must yet learn that all the societies established in uninspired wisdom since the time of Christ on earth, have no just claims whatever to be regarded as either the kingdom of Christ or any part of it.



---

## CHAPTER XIX.

---

### CONCLUSION.

In the foregoing work we found, that the objections urged against the antiquity of the Baptists as a denomination are wholly without foundation. No point in history has yet been found, this side of the days of Jesus Christ on earth, where the Baptist denomination had its origin. Notwithstanding all the efforts of bitter foes, no break has yet been discovered in the chain of Baptist succession. There has been no point of time since the apostolic age, when it can be said, in truth, there were no witnesses for Christ on earth holding the faith and practice of Baptists. Every other professed Christian denomination, either admits a human origin in modern times, or claims its succession through the Romish apostacy. But as the Romish succession is the succession of Antichrist, therefore those churches whose history is identified with the Church of Rome, can lay no claim whatever to the true succession. The Baptists are the only people on earth who claim a succession from the apostolic age, independent of the Church of Rome; and as Jesus Christ has a church against which the gates of hell have never prevailed, which has existed independent of the Romish hierarchy, therefore the Baptists are really the only claimants to this succession. All others, by their own acknowledgments, have no just claims to be the church established by Jesus Christ himself,



which has been perpetuated to the present time. We take it for granted, that every denomination is competent to give the leading facts of its own history. Even the most depraved denominations except the Catholics have sufficient candor and honesty to give a correct account of their own origin. The Romish Church herself, confesses that many of her rites and ceremonies have been introduced since the apostolic age. She acknowledges that she has changed the ordinances of Jesus Christ on the supposed authority of the keys. Even Rome herself with her present rites and ceremonies does not claim an apostolic origin. The Lutheran Church claims its origin from Martin Luther, about the year 1525. It has no succession beyond the sixteenth century, unless it was the Romish succession. And though the Church of England claims apostolic succession through Rome herself, yet she is compelled to look to King Henry VIII., about the year 1530, for her origin separate from the Romish jurisdiction. The Presbyterian Church boldly claims the “godly-learned” man, John Calvin, as its founder. Its succession extends no further back in history than the year 1541. The various branches of Presbyterianism are of still more recent date. The Methodist Church glories in John Wesley as her founder and head. She can not go beyond the year 1729, for the germ of that system of ecclesiasticism known as Methodism. And it was not until the year 1784 that Methodism was rent off from the Episcopal Church. The Cumberland Presbyterian Church claims its origin from the fourth day of February, 1810. It has Messrs. Ewing, King, and McAdow, as its founders. The Campbellite society, which makes higher pretensions than all the modern sects combined, boast of Alexander Campbell, of Bethany, Virginia, as the





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



sion; all claiming the perpetuity of the church from the time of Jesus Christ. Mr. Orchard, the historian, says: “I have demonstrated, so far as human testimony is allowed to prove any fact, that THE BAPTIST CHURCH, as the Church of Christ, has existed from the day of Pentecost to the privileged period.”

*Orchard's Bapt. His., vol. II, p. 11.*

Mr. Benedict says, that “The Welsh Baptists have the fullest confidence that their sentiments have always lived in their mountainous retreats, from the apostolic age to the present time, although the people were not always congregated in churches. Their country, in their estimation, was another Piedmont, where the witnesses for the truth found shelter and concealment in times of universal darkness and superstition.”

*Ben. His. Bapt., p. 344.*

I had designed to furnish a sketch of the Welsh Baptist history, showing their claims to an existence in their mountain retreats up to the apostolic times, but my space forbids. This universal claim of the Welsh Baptists to church succession, should have great weight as evidence on this question. No living historian, whether friend or foe, can find the origin of the Welsh Baptists this side of the days of the apostles. Again, we have the testimony of the American Baptist Publication Society, indorsing the language of Mr. Pengilly, as follows: “Our principles are as old as Christianity. We acknowledge no founder but Christ. With enthusiasts in Germany, or in any age or country, we have no connection, and our forefathers never had. Enthusiast may be designated by the same name, but that proves nothing. Persons holding our distinctive principles—*i. e.*,

*Baptist Manual, p. 82.*



the baptism of believers only—have appeared in all ages of the Christian era. From Christ to nearly the end of the second century, there were NO OTHERS; at least, if there were any, their history is a blank.”

On Baptist succession, Dr. Peck remarks that, “Baptists in every age, from the apostles, remained true to the kingdom which Christ came to establish.” *Religious Denom.*, p. 197.

Speaking of the conversion of Menno, Mr. Belcher says: “This great change took place in 1535; it endued Menno with a martyr spirit. Now, with a penitent heart, he was buried with Christ by baptism, and joined the martyr church of the New Testament—that church more ancient than Rome—persecuted in every age, because so pure. It is now too late in the day to confound this primitive people with the ‘Munster Sect,’ because both were called by their enemies, ‘Anabaptists.’ This is proof of pitiable ignorance. Learned Romanists knew better. ‘If the truth of religion,’ said Cardinal Hosius, President of the Council of Trent in 1555, ‘were to be judged of by the readiness and cheerfulness which a man of any sect shows in suffering, then the opinions and persuasions of no sect can be truer or surer than those of the Anabaptists (Baptists); since there have been none for these 1200 years past that have been more grievously punished.’ Yet Pope Pius II. confessed, in 1460, ‘Neither the decrees of popes, nor armies of Christians could extirpate them.’ ‘All sorts of people,’ said Seisselius, Archbishop of Turin in 1470, ‘have repeatedly endeavored, but in vain, to root them out; for even yet, contrary to the opinion of all men, they still remain conquerors, or at least wholly invincible.’ Such



are the concessions of illustrious Romanists to the long, unbroken line of our meek martyr witnesses." Thus we have the admissions of Catholics themselves, that they have never been able to succeed in breaking the line of Baptist succession. Time would fail to introduce the testimony of all the Baptist writers who claim the church succession from the apostolic age. We conclude the list with the testimony of J. Newton Brown, the learned author of the Religious Encyclopedia, as follows: "The Baptists

*Baptist Martyrs,*  
p. 17. have no difficulty whatever, in tracing up their principles and their churches to the apostolic age. It has been often said by our enemies, that we originated in the German city of Munster, in 1534. Lamentable must be the weakness and ignorance of such an assertion, come from whom it may. It were easy to cite eminent Pedobaptist historians to refute this calumny—especially Linborch and Mosheim, of the last century." Again, Mr. Brown remarks, that, "The

*Baptist Martyrs,*  
p. 20. Baptists—though for the most part of the poor of the world, rich in faith only, and unknown to fame, as were the primitive Christians—have yet, in almost all ages, had of their number, men of the most eminent learning and ability, who died as martyrs to the faith. From the time of Novatian, indeed, it has been customary with their adversaries to call the whole body by the name of its most distinguished leader, as if they were a new sect, of which he was the originator. Thus the *Cathari* were called Novatians—then Paulicians—then Petrobrusians, Henricians, Josephists—then Arnoldists, Waldenses, Lollards, Mennonites; nor were they ever permitted to bear their present name of Baptists until after their legal toleration in Eng-





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



pruning hooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more." And Jesus Christ who was dead and is alive forevermore, taught the succession, or perpetuity of the church when he said, "Upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it."

*Matthew* 16: 18.

And He pointed out the same doctrine of church succession, when he gave the solemn emblems of his broken body and shed blood, to be observed in his kingdom until his second coming; and the Savior promises to be with his church always, even until the end of the world.

We, as Baptists, believe with the apostle Paul, that we have received "a kingdom that can not be moved" from its glorious foundation; and

*Hebrews* 12: 28.

though we are now regarded as a "sect," and *every-where spoken against*, we believe that the time is not far distant, when "The kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of

the kingdom under the whole heaven,

*Daniel* 7: 27.

shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey him."

And though the Bride of Christ is yet despised and rejected of men, yet she will, at last, "Look forth as the morning, fair as the moon, clear as the sun, and terrible as an army with banners," and in her joyful marriage-day will be "Heard as it were the voice of a

great multitude, and as the voice of many

*Rev.* 19: 6-8.

waters, and as the voice of mighty thunders, saying, Alleluia; for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth. Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready."



## APPENDIX.

BY

PROF. A. S. WORRELL,

OF

LEXINGTON, KY.

---

THE church question is destined, sooner or later, to shake existing ecclesiasticisms to their foundations. The truly converted man wishes to know what the true church *is*; and when this important information is obtained, he will be disposed to seek membership therein. Could the history of the Church of Christ be brought fairly before the Christian world, the truly pious and devoted among the numerous sects of Christendom, would, in many instances, leave their present moorings, and seek a place within her port.

In tracing the history of existing denominations backward, we find several of them falling out before we travel a century in the past; and when we reach the beginning of the sixteenth century, we find only *two* leading denominations—the *Baptist* and the *Catholic*. These two opposing organizations—the one persecuted, and the other *persecuting*—run backward into the fourth, or possibly the third century *anno domini*. They are the only parties who have any just claims for church honors, if it be ad-



mitted that the Church of Christ has had a continuous existence since its organization. The “Reformed Church” (Campbellite) is about *eighteen centuries* too young; the Methodist Episcopal and Protestant Methodist, more than *seventeen centuries*; all other modern Pedobaptist organizations, at least *fifteen centuries*,—to assume the honor of being the Church of Christ. If in nothing else, they are greatly wanting in *time*. All Pedobaptist churches must trace their history, directly or indirectly, to the Catholic Church. They have Catholic baptism, so-called. The “mode” of their baptism rests only upon Catholic authority. And the only possible succession which they can claim for their baptism (sprinkling or pouring), is through Catholicism. If the Catholic Church falls short of the proper age, by two or three centuries, of course all those sects, deriving their origin from her, must, even if they should make good their claims since the Reformation, fall short by the same period. We see no possible ground which modern Pedobaptists can urge, in support of their claims, to be the true churches of Christ; for, if the Catholic was the true church at the time of the Reformation, none of these anathematized schisms could, with reason, lay claim to that honor; and if the Catholic was not the true church, those coming out of her, could not be (since “water can not rise above its level”); in either event, Protestant claims to be the church, are null and void. The contest for church honors, therefore, lies between the Baptists and Catholics. And it has already been said that the Catholics can not trace their history further back than about the third century. Indeed, we have the New Testament history of many of the churches founded by the apostles and early Christians; and, in that history, noth-





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



church, he manifestly had reference to a congregation of true worshipers—such as the church at Jerusalem, the church at Ephesus, etc.—an organization whose duty it would be to proclaim the Word of Life to a lost world, observe and perpetuate the ordinances in their purity. Now, it smacks of infidelity to doubt that such an organization or company of Christians has existed *somewhere*, ever since the first church was established. And to suppose, that before it is reasonable to *believe* that the church has existed in all ages since its first establishment, unless it can first be established by historical proof, is to discredit the statement of Christ, and open the flood-gates of infidelity. It should be remembered that very few of the facts of past ages have ever been recorded. Many institutions, large and flourishing, may have existed, and yet there may have been no historian to take notice of them. Can we say, that, *because* any particular event is not recorded, it never happened? Those who will not believe that the church has existed continuously since its organization, virtually assume, as it seems to us, that everything important has been recorded in each successive age! A monstrous assumption, indeed! We urge, therefore, that we should believe that the church has had a continuous existence, even if history said not one word about it, since we should believe God rather than man; yea, “Let God be true, and every man a liar.” History can not make the words of the Almighty more credible!

It should be remembered also, that, situated as the church was for more than a *thousand years*, she was in a very poor condition to write her own history. “Driven into the wilderness,” and forced to conceal her existence, for a great portion of the time, from her deadly persecu-



tors—poor, wretched, wandering about in dens and caves of earth—she felt little *disposed* to write anything. Indeed, it would have been wrong—*suicidal*—for her to have furnished the *names* and *doings* of those whose lives were eagerly sought by their blood-thirsty accusers and persecutors. To expect that they would have given anything like a full record of their works, is wholly *unreasonable*. The absence of a connected history of the church is what a reasonable being, under all circumstances, would naturally expect.

The history of the church, therefore, has been written, in the main—so far as it has been written at all—by her *enemies*. The bloody statutes and decrees of kings and rulers, instigated by Satanic malice, constitute the principal portion of the written history of the church during much of the period of persecution; but for such records, we would know but little of her existence (except as we believe the Divine promise in the absence of all other proof), for one thousand years previous to the Reformation. It may not be amiss to state that a “church, scattered” by persecution, is not necessarily annihilated. The church at Jerusalem was persecuted and scattered, yet they did not forfeit, by being thus maltreated, the right of assembling together whenever and wherever they could; and when they did so assemble for the purpose of divine worship, they were just as truly the church as they were before they were scattered. Apply this principle generally, and we have little difficulty, in a historical point of view, in affirming the continuous existence of the church.

It is generally agreed that there were faithful followers of Christ during all the period of persecution; now, if there were such, whenever they came together, in the Spirit



of Christ, to observe the ordinances, or otherwise engage in the worship of God, *there* the church existed. Of course this view of the church excludes some notions which we are wont to regard as inseparable from her existence, such as a *house for worship and a regular time for meeting*. A close organization, having a regular time and place for meeting, is not necessary, under all circumstances, to the existence of a church. These are, indeed, great conveniences; but where adverse circumstances, over which the church has no control, disperse and make it necessary for the members to meet only occasionally and at irregular intervals—in caves and at night—who will say that such a company of faithful followers of the Lamb are not a church? Would a *century* of such oppression crush out the life of a church, provided it assemble occasionally for divine worship? Manifestly not. In this way, we doubt not, the Church of Christ was perpetuated, for long intervals, and perhaps centuries, during the uninterrupted sway of the man of sin.

All the facts of history—so far as they have been transmitted to us—go to show that the church, in accordance with the preceding view, has existed continuously from the days of its organization up to the present time. Suppose, however, that some one should assume the opposite view, and urge that the church became extinct under the persecutions of Antichrist, he will then be forced to adopt one of the following positions: 1. That the Savior's promise, to perpetuate the church, failed; or, 2. That the Catholic is the true church; or, 3. That the promise of the Savior had no reference to the church as an organized body. To adopt the first view, is to become an open infidel; to take the second, is to side with Antichrist; and





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



with the apostolic churches, and which was “built” by Christ himself, they would be disposed to seek places in it, and contribute their part toward furthering its interests.

2. Another advantage would result from the prevalence of a correct historical knowledge of the church : It would serve to expose the false claims of other rival organizations, and thus cripple their influence, and break the spell which they have imposed upon millions of earth’s inhabitants, many of whom are the children of God.

3. Finally, it would cause the members of the church to prize their privileges more highly, love her “sacred courts” more ardently, and labor more zealously to promote her prosperity.

In the present work the author does not profess to introduce things wholly unknown heretofore ; but he has sought and obtained materials from various reliable sources, compiled and arranged them in a convenient form for reference. That his collations shed light upon the subject of “church succession,” in a historical point of view, will, we think, be readily confessed. The work, which has cost the author no little labor, will serve the cause of truth, and fill an important place in our popular denominational literature. The author deserves the thanks of the great Baptist family for his untiring energy and great zeal in the Master’s cause.



# ABBREVIATIONS.

---

*Rel. Denom. in U. S. and G. B.*—*Religious Denominations in the United States and Great Britain.* By Charles Desilver. This is a work of about 800 pages; and it is the most reliable work on the history of denominations which could be prepared, from the fact that the history of each denomination is furnished by a leading writer of its own communion.

*Old Bapt. Test.*—*Old Baptist Test.* By Dr. John M. Watson, a leading Anti-Mission Baptist of Tennessee.

*Letters to Dr. Watson.* By Dr. R. B. C. Howell. These Letters were first published in "The Baptist," and afterward sent out in tract form of 50 pages.

*Phil. Bapt. Asso.*—*Philadelphia Baptist Association.* This work contains the Minutes of the Philadelphia Baptist Association, from 1707 to 1807—one hundred years—bound in a book of 475 pages. This is a work of great historical value.

*Crosby's His. Eng. Bapt.*—*Crosby's History of the English Baptists.* In four volumes. By Thomas Crosby, a deacon in Dr. Gill's church. This work was published in 1738, and contains matter of great value.

*Mos. Church His.*—*Mosheim's Church History.* We have quoted Macclaine's translation. The learned author of this work was a member of the Lutheran Church, and deeply prejudiced against the Baptists.

*Jones' Ch. His.*—*Jones' Church History.* By William Jones. Two volumes in one. From the fifth London edition. "Published by the Trustees of the Free-Will Baptist Connection." This is a work of great value.

*Rob.'s Eccl. Res.*—*Robinson's Ecclesiastical Researches.* Published at Cambridge, in 1792. Though Robinson himself was a Baptist of Socinian sentiments, yet this work is of great importance in an historic point of view.



*Perrin's His. Wald.*—*Perrin's History of the Waldenses.* By Jean Paul Perrin. Published in 1847, by Griffith & Simon, in Philadelphia. This edition was published under the influence of the Presbyterians, with an Essay on the Present Waldenses, by Robert Baird, D. D., and a Recommendation, by Samuel Miller, D. D.

*His. Wald., A. S. S. U.*—*History of the Waldenses.* By the American Sunday-School Union.

*Monastier's His. Vaud.*—*Monastier's History of the Vaudois Church.*

*Neand. His. Chr. Rel. and Ch.*—*Neander's History of the Christian Religion and Church during the Three First Centuries.* Translated from the German, by H. J. Rose. Fifth edition. Published in Philadelphia, in 1844.

*Rel. Denom.*—*Religious Denominations.* By Joseph Belcher.

The foregoing list contains but a few of the works quoted in this book.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



	PAGE.
Bishop and Elder the same office, - - - -	302
Baptismal Salvation by Luther, - - - -	401
Baptismal Salvation in the Episcopal Church, - -	405
Bitterness of writers against the Baptists, - -	420
Baxter on the evils of Immersion, - - - -	429
Charleston Association, - . - - -	28
Clarke, Dr. John, organized the Newport Church in 1638, -	64
Charge of Drs. Miller and Rice against Jones, - -	114
Cromwell on the rise of the Waldenses, - - -	141
Creeds among Baptists, - - - - -	187
Confession of Faith published by the English Baptists, -	188
Communion objections, - - - - -	233
Communion in heaven, - - - - -	238
Concessions to Baptist views of Communion, - -	250
Concessions of Dr. Hibbard, - . - - -	252
Coke and Asbury for Close Communion,	256
Campbell for Close Communion, - - - -	258
Catholics and Protestants against the Baptists, -	272
Cruel treatment of the Baptists by Presbyterians, - -	273
Cyprian to Fidus on Infant baptism, - - -	309
Church in the wilderness, - - - - -	344
Close of the Waldensean period, . - - - -	385
Catholic Church, - - - - -	394
Calvin persecutes, - - - - -	419
Campbellism, - - - - -	439
Campbell the head, - - - - -	439
Difference between Perrin and Jones concerning infant baptism among the Waldenses, - - -	116
Decree of Victor Amadius to force the Baptists to baptize children, - - - - -	132
Discipline of Methodists for Close Communion, - -	257
Doctrine of the Novatians, - - - - -	314
Donatists, - - - - -	328
Dragon cast out, - - - - -	342
Destruction of Waldenses, - - - - -	373
Decree for the baptism of the infants of the Waldenses, -	387
Dreadful sufferings of the Waldenses in prisons, -	388



	PAGE.
Decree of Charles V. against the Baptists, - - -	415
Doctrine for which the English Baptists were burned, -	425
Doctrine of English Baptists, - - -	427
Early Welsh Baptists missionary, - - -	32
Early Baptists in favor of ministerial education, - -	37
Events connected with the Roger Williams affair summed up,	60
English Baptists not from John Smith, - - -	78
English Baptists descended from the German Baptists,	84
Equality in church business taught in the Scriptures, . -	209
Equality claimed among Baptists, - - -	223
Equality among the primitive churches, - - -	290
Expulsion of the Novatians, - - -	339
Equality among the Waldenses, - - -	361
Episcopal Church, - - -	404
Evils of immersion, - - -	429
Faith before baptism, - - -	193
Folly of communion with Reformers, - - -	259
Flight of the Woman, - - -	336
Final Dispersion of the Waldenses, - - -	385
German Baptists not from the Munster riot, - -	91
German Baptists from the ancient Waldenses, - -	99
Graves, J. R., on church independency, - - -	224
Growth of infant baptism, - - -	310
Howell on Succession, - - -	18
Holmes whipped for preaching, - - -	273
Horrible cruelty of the Reformers, - - -	414
Injustice of charging Baptists with the Munster affair, -	94
Infant baptism among the Waldenses, from the Spiritual Almanac, - - -	123
Infant baptism not in the old Waldensean confessions, -	126
Infant communion, - - -	297
Infant baptism a fearful sin, - - -	311
Infant baptism the invention of the Devil, - -	411
Infants saved by baptism—Wesley, - - -	438



	PAGE.
Jeter, J. B., on the "Old School" Baptists, - - - - -	25
"James and Mary," - - - - -	78
Jesus the founder of his church, - - - - -	172
Jeter on the use of creeds, - - - - -	187
Jesus baptized before communion, - - - - -	243
Jones on the dispersion of the Waldenses, - - - - -	386
Kingdom visible, - - - - -	9
Kingdom of God not meat and drink, - - - - -	12
Liberty of conscience, - - - - -	223
Lord's Supper in the Kingdom, - - - - -	244
Lutheran Church, - - - - -	399
Luther calls the Baptists "devils," - - - - -	402
Lutheranism from Rome, - - - - -	403
Luther persecutes, - - - - -	420
Munster Riot, - - - - -	92
Miller and Rice against Jones, - - - - -	115
Modern Waldenses enrolled with the State clergy, - - - - -	127
Milton on the rise of the Waldenses, - - - - -	141
Ministers to rule, - - - - -	211
Ministers are servants, - - - - -	212
Mixed communion sanctions error, - - - - -	246
Modern Baptists persecuted, - - - - -	271
Meeting of the remnant of the Waldenses after their dispersion, - - - - -	389
Millions destroyed by the Catholics, - - - - -	398
Modern Baptists, - - - - -	409
Martyrdom of Wagner, - - - - -	412
Martyrdom of Hubmeyer, - - - - -	413
Martyrdom of Baptists by the Reformers, - - - - -	414
Martyrdom of Satler and his wife, - - - - -	415
Mennonites, - - - - -	431
Mosheim on the Mennonites, - - - - -	432
Modern Mennonites have departed from the faith, - - - - -	434
Methodism, - - - - -	435





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



	PAGE.
Presbyterianism, - - - - -	407
Protestant decree against Baptists, - - -	418
Queen Elizabeth persecuted the Baptists, - -	424
Royal Encyclopedia on the Munster affair, - -	97
Rice, Dr. N. L., against Jones, - - -	115
Repentance prior to faith with the heart, - - -	192
Restricted communion, - - - - -	233
Restricted communion among Baptists, - - -	262
Rise of the hierarchy, - - - - -	305
Rise of infant baptism, - - - - -	307
Rome not to be reformed, - - - - -	331
Rome described by Waller, - - - - -	332
Romanism, - - - - -	394
Romish blasphemy, - - - - -	395
Romish baptismal salvation, - - - - -	397
Rise of Lutheranism, - - - - -	400
Rise of the Episcopal Church, - - - - -	404
Rogers for burning Baptists, - - - - -	423
Secession of the Anti-Mission Baptists, - - -	24
Smith, John, repudiated his baptism, - - -	81
Trott, Elder S., on the separation from the missionaries, -	24
The Savior immersed, - - - - -	200
The Baptists sided with Washington in the Revolution, -	226
The charge of Close Communion not applicable to Baptists,	255
The true Church persecuted, - - - - -	266
Terrible persecution of early Christians, - - -	299
The great apostacy, - - - - -	329
The Waldensean period closed in the year 1686, - -	391
Traditions of Rome, - - - - -	396
Terrible decree of Charles V., - - - - -	415
Union of the corrupt Church and State, - - -	334
Validity of Novatian's baptism, - - - - -	320
Valleys of Piedmont described, - - - - -	347
Vengeance on guilty nations, - - - - -	392



	PAGE.
Welsh Tract Church emigrated from Wales, - - -	65
Waldenses—the name, - - - - -	107
Waldenses driven out of the valleys in 1686, - -	128
Waldensean Confessions contain no infant baptism, - -	135
Waldenses regarded infant baptism as a mark of Antichrist,	137
Waldenses, their origin, - - - - -	138
Waldenses from the Novatians, - - - - -	142
Waldenses never needed any reformation, - - -	146
Waldenses claim an uninterrupted succession, - -	149
Washing away of sins in baptism, - - - - -	202
Women to keep silence in the churches, - - - -	216
Women allowed to pray and prophesy, - - - -	217
Waller on the folly of Open Communion, - - - -	248
Waldensean period, - - - - -	336
Waldenses claim Jesus as their founder and head, - -	349
Waldenses claim the Bible as their rule, - - -	351
Waldenses buried in baptism, - - - - -	355
Waldenses opposed baptismal salvation, - - - -	356
Waldenses strict in communion, - - - - -	364
Waldenses persecuted, - - - - -	370
Waldensean women and children perished in the snow, -	374
Waldensean children represented as beasts, - - -	376
Waldenses committed to the flames in 1232, - - -	378
Waldenses increased under persecutions, - - -	379
Wesley for baptismal salvation, - - - - -	437
Zuingle debates with Baptists, - - - - -	410
Zuinglians against the Baptists, - - - - -	411









**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Get Smart

Over 2,000 years of  
human knowledge in  
797,885 volumes

Instant access  
\$8.99/month

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



edge the picture which our author draws; many would shrink from confessing the errors which he brings to the light. But the book is nevertheless an exposure of the system. If thousands are connected with this error by accident, or prejudice, or education, whose experience and practice or a denial of it, this phenomenon constitutes no good reason why it should not be exposed. Manfully meeting error for the love we bear to the truth, and kindly treating the erring, is the only sure way to stop the progress of the former, and win the latter back to the primitive faith.”—*Kentucky Baptist*.

“The author’s aim seems to be, to show from these writings what Mr. Campbell and his followers really teach, but he does more than this—he enters the list of the disputants to show the errors and sophistry of Mr. Campbell’s teachings, and their wide and vital divergence from the teachings of the New Testament and of Baptists. The work shows thought and studious research—its style is sufficiently lucid. It does not take the place of Elder A. P. Williams’ master-piece on the leading features of Campbellism—his review of Moses E. Lard—but it has a place, and, seemingly a very appropriate place, of its own. We have not fallen upon one bitter or malicious sentence in it, and we hope, for the honor of truth, there are none. When the venom of hate distills its poison upon a defense of truth, the truth suffers from its virulence. Any one wishing to know what Campbellism, or the current reformation, generally so-styled, is, can distinctly ascertain it by a careful perusal of this book. And if the refutation of it he there finds is not satisfactory, he will find one that is so in A. P. Williams’ review of Lard.”—*Texas Baptist*.

“This is evidently the work of one who has made himself entirely familiar with Campbellism; who has read its inmost heart; of one also, who loves that faith which was of old delivered to the saints, and is ready to contend for it earnestly. We commend the book to such as may desire a succinct view of the history of Campbellism, with a statement and refutation of its principal tenets. The style is direct, pungent, and the reasoning conclusive, because, while logical, also scriptural.”—*The Standard, Chicago, Ill.*

The TEXT-BOOK is sold to Agents at a discount of one-third off. Single copies are sent post-paid by mail, at \$1.50. All orders should be addressed to D. B. Ray, Lexington, Ky.



# The Baptist Sentinel,

Published Monthly, in Lexington, Ky., by

A. S. WORRELL AND D. B. RAY,

---

*Is a high-toned Family Periodical, devoted to the elucidation and defense of the whole Truth, as held and maintained by Baptists; and it will also be the province of the **Sentinel** kindly, but faithfully, to expose the various forms of religious error which have inundated our land. Especial attention will be given to the cultivation of self-denying piety of heart and life. Baptist history will also receive due consideration.*

*The **Sentinel** is a neatly-bound pamphlet of forty-eight pages, printed in clear type, on good paper, suitable to be bound in book form. The best writers of the denomination are its contributors.*

## TERMS :

One Copy, Twelve Months.....	\$2 00
Five Copies at one office, the names being sent in one letter.....	8 00
Ten Copies, as above.....	15 00

Any number above this at the same rate. Those who get up clubs of ten or more, will receive one copy *gratis*, for one year. As a contribution to the Cause of Christ, we will furnish the *Sentinel* to any Minister, or Student for the Ministry, One Year for One Dollar.

☞ Money, if sent by Post-Office Order, Registered Letter, or Accepted Check, may be sent at our risk. We, however, will hold ourselves responsible for no money sent by mail. Procure a Post-Office Order, at our expense, and address it,

**WORRELL & RAY,**

*Lexington, Kentucky.*



# THE BAPTIST SUCCESSION

IS SOLD ON THE FOLLOWING TERMS PER COPY:

Bound in Cloth.....	\$2 00
“ “ Sheep.....	3 00
“ “ Calf, Gilt.....	5 00

*Any person sending Ten Dollars, will receive six copies of the History. Money should be sent by postal orders. The **Succession** will be sent to agents at a discount of one-third off. An active agent could do well in working for the*

**HISTORY, KEY TO CAMPBELLISM, AND BAPTIST SENTINEL.**

*Address,*

**D. B. RAY,**  
**LEXINGTON, KY.**

P. S. *Special Traveling Agents will receive my work at 40 per cent. We will give to such agents 50 cents for each cash subscriber to the Sentinel.*

**D. B. R.**